莫哥西亞多開示錄

-- 空、有為及無為

Dhamma Talks by Mogok Sayadaw

- Emptiness, Conditioned, and Unconditioned

第 9 部 (參考用譯文)

特別聲明:本參考用譯文疏漏、錯繆難免,讀者應慎思明 辨。僅供法友參考;並祈藉此拋磚引玉,眾法友能共襄盛 舉,共同圓滿此譯事。 Nanda 謹識。

目次

Part 9	1
The Dangers of Wrong Knowledge	1
錯誤知見之危險	
錯誤知識的危險	
Non-conflict and Non-attachment	
非衝突與無執著 1962 年 8 月 8 日	10
無衝突與無執著	12
Development with Contemplation	15
修觀之進展	
透過觀照的發展	
Mountains of Bones and Oceans of Blood	19
骨山血海	22
T1	22
T2	
骨山血海	25
A Simile for Nibbāna	
涅槃之譬喻	31
涅槃的譬喻	
Contemplation on Anatta	

無我觀	38
無我觀	39
Cessation of the Taints	42
漏盡之道	44
漏盡	46
Are You Worshipping Wrong Views?	49
你是否在禮拜邪見?	51
您是否在崇拜錯誤的見解?	52
Body and Mental Pains	55
身心之苦	57
身心之苦	59
How to Die with Feelings?	62
如何以覺受而死?	
如何帶著感受死亡?	
Should Know One's Value	74
應知自我價值	76
應知自身價值	
Mistaken with Nibbāna	
錯認涅槃	
第一講(T1)	
① 光明(obhāsa)	
② 智慧鋒利(ñāṇa)	
③ 喜悅(pīti)	
④ 寧靜(passaddhi)	86
⑤ 樂(sukha)	
第二講(T2)	
⑥ 勝解(adhimokkha)/信(saddhā)	
⑦ 精進(paggaha / viriya)	
⑧ 念(sati)	
⑨ 觀照之平等心(ājavana)/捨(upekkhā)	90
⑩ 昧著(nikanti)/貪著	
結語	
錯認涅槃	
Rely on Dhamma, Not Outside Power	
應依靠佛法,而非外在力量	
依靠佛法,而非外力	
The Murderers	
殺人兇手	
殺手	107

Fall in Love with Dukkha	110
愛上苦	111
愛上苦	113
Why Become Living Beings?	115
為何變成眾生	117
為何成為眾生?	120
Disenchantment with the Monkey	122
厭離猴子心	125
對猴子的厭離	130
How to Perform Dāna?	133
如何修布施	134
如何行布施?	137
Staying with the Truly Reliable Dhamma	139
應依靠佛法,而非外在力量	142
安住於真正可靠的佛法	146
On Vipassanā Bhāvana	149
關於內觀修習	155
T1	155
第二部分(T2)	159
關於內觀修行	160
Wrong View on Kamma	165
錯解業的觀念	167
對業力的錯誤觀點	169
The Source of Great Sufferings	171
巨大苦之根源	174
大苦之源	176
The Importance of Anicca	179
無常的重要性	181
無常的重要性	183
Wholesome Kamma with Knowledge	185
具備智慧的善業	
帶有智慧的善業	
Wrong View, Dukkha and Nibbāna	191
邪見、苦與涅槃	
錯誤的觀點、苦和涅槃	
Importance of the Truth of Dukkha	
苦諦的重要性	
From Ignorance to Knowledge	

從無明到智慧	204
從無明到智慧	

Part 9

The Dangers of Wrong Knowledge

31st, July, 1962

[Sayadaw based this talk on a Pali word—asandiṭṭhitova which means the dangers of wrong seeing. There were 25 kinds of dangers mentioned in The Text and asandiṭṭhitova was one of them. It can be also translated as wrong view, wrong knowledge and wrong knowing. Human beings are seeing, viewing, knowing and understanding things in the wrong ways, which create a lot of sufferings and problems in societies.

Some of them come from education, entertainments, faiths, politics, economic and even from science and technology. Right seeing, viewing, knowing and understanding bring happiness, peace, and security. Wrong seeing, viewing, knowing, and understanding bring sufferings, problems, and insecurity.]

The Buddha reminded us to live with mindfulness and clear comprehension (sati and sampajañña). Knowing the arising dhamma is sati (e.g., the mind). Do they stay in this way? Or vanishing? Just observe them with paññā.

Therefore, be mindful and observe with paññā. It was so important that the Buddha had to remind us. With mindfulness, we know what exists, and then know the vanishing with paññā. Paññā knows the mind arises and vanishes. Then the mind process can't continue.

If the mind process continues, you'll be in dukkha. If the mind process is cutting off, you'll attain the blissful Nibbāna (sukha nibbāna). If I am talking like this, it may not be clear for you. So look at the DA chart. By seeing the vanishing of the mind, section ② will not connect with section ③.

It's called magga (knowledge) because kilesa will not arise. With the cessation of samudaya, section ④ not arises. Taṇhā nirodho nibbānaṁ—the cessation of craving is Nibbāna. It's also dukkha nirodho nibbānaṁ—the cessation of dukkha is Nibbāna.

If not, it becomes taṇhā samudaya dukkha samudayo—with the arising of craving, dukkha arises. That is taṇhā paccaya upadanaṁ..., bhāva paccaya jāti—craving conditions clinging..., becoming conditions birth. If you can cut it off in this way, you can attain Nibbāna. This is the cessation of samudaya and dukkha saccas.

It seems to be that Nibbāna is near to us. Physical and mental sufferings are happening to everyone. Why is that? Because in the past we have done dukkha saccas and brought it here. And then from dukkha sacca, dukkha grows out. (It's like a bitter tree grows bitter fruits.)

The Buddha reminded us not to fall into the dangers of wrong seeing. Because of someone, I am in suffering. Don't let this kind of wrong view arises. With wrong view, mind and form disappear, and person or being arises. This is the danger of wrong seeing. It happens because of not seeing impermanence.

By making the non-existing as existing; suffering, sorrow, lamentation, crying and sleeplessness come into being. These are not the causes of the past. It happens by encountering the danger of wrong seeing. So don't put the blame on the past kamma.

Because, with the danger of wrong seeing, mental suffering arises. Therefore, we have to correct the danger of wrong seeing (asandiṭṭhitova), and make it become the right seeing (sandiṭṭhiko). Having the right seeing, we will attain Nibbāna, and then sorrow and lamentation will cease.

With the wrong seeing, sorrow and lamentation will follow. Among all the dangers, falling into the danger of wrong view is the most frightening one (The Buddha mentioned 25 kinds of dangers, and asandiṭṭhitova is one of them.). Wrong seeing is samudaya sacca (the cause of dukkha). It will get the painful birth of dukkha sacca (the result of suffering).

The danger of wrong seeing is not made by others. It comes from wrong knowledge. It arises by not seeing the impermanence of the mind / body process, and seeing them as a person or a being instead. These dhamma have already existed and were taught by The Buddha.

I have to describe it because you don't know about them. After falling into the painful planes, it's not easy to come back again to the blissful planes. In the present, human beings are suffered and will fall into woeful planes in samsāra. A lot of people are in the woeful planes because they encounter the danger of wrong seeing.

(Most living beings come to this human world and create hell, animal, and ghost planes on earth for their future rebirths.)

Right seeing is the Path Knowledge (magga ñāṇa). If you attain the Path Knowledge, you will see Nibbāna. With the attainment of right seeing, samudaya ceases and dukkha ends. With non-attainment of right seeing, samudaya increases and dukkha becomes outgrowth. Therefore, whatever mind arises, contemplate its impermanence.

錯誤知見之危險

1962年7月31日

【本場開示依據巴利語詞彙「asandiṭṭhitova」而說明,意指「錯誤見解之危險」。在《巴利聖典》中提及二十五種危險,當中便包括「asandiṭṭhitova」。此詞亦可譯為「邪見」、「錯誤知見」或「錯誤認知」。眾生對事物的見解、觀察、知識與理解皆存在偏差,因此導致種種苦惱與社會問題。】

這些錯誤知見的根源,有的來自教育、有的來自娛樂、信仰、政治、經濟,乃 至科學與科技。正見、正觀、正知與正解能帶來幸福、安寧與安全;而錯見、 錯觀、錯知與錯解,則帶來苦難、問題與不安。

佛陀教導我們應以正念與明覺(sati 與 sampajañña)來生活。能覺知當下生起的法者,即為正念(例如,覺知心)。它們是否會持續存在?還是會消逝?只需以智慧(paññā)觀察它們。

因此,要以正念及智慧來觀察。此事關重要,佛陀才不斷提醒我們。有了正念,就能覺知當下存在之法,再藉由智慧,了知其滅去。智慧能夠了知心的生起與滅去,如此,心的流程便不再延續。

若心的流程延續,就會落入苦中;若能截斷心的流程,就能證得涅槃的樂(sukha nibbāna)。我如此說明,或許你仍不太明白,那就看看「緣起圖表」(DA chart)吧。若能觀察到心的滅去,圖中的第二支就不會與第三支相連。

這就稱為「道智」(magga ñāṇa),因為煩惱(kilesa)不再生起。由於集的止息,圖中的第四支也就不再生起。「**渴愛止則涅槃(taṇhā nirodho nibbānaṁ)**」——渴愛的止息即是涅槃;亦即**「苦之止息即是涅槃(dukkha nirodho nibbānaṁ)」**。

若非如此,便是**「渴愛生則苦生(taṇhā samudayo dukkha samudayo)」——**渴愛生起時,苦亦隨之而生。那就是**「渴愛緣取、取緣有、有緣生(taṇhā paccaya upādānam..., bhava paccaya jāti)」**。若能如此斷除,便能證入涅槃。這便是「集諦與苦諦的止息」。

這似乎說明涅槃離我們不遠。身心之苦遍佈每個人,為何如此?因為過去我們 造作了苦諦,如今招感現前。從苦諦中,又滋生出更多的苦。(就如苦樹結出 苦果一樣。)

佛陀提醒我們,不可陷入錯誤見解的危險。不要認為「因某某人,我才受苦」 ——切勿讓這類錯見生起。有了錯見,便將名色(心與色)錯認為「人」或 「眾生」的存在,這就是錯見的危險。其因在於未見無常。

將「本無之物」錯認為「實有」,便引生痛苦、悲傷、哀號、哭泣與失眠。這 些並非過去所造之因所致,而是現世遭遇錯見之危險所致。因此,不應一味歸 咎於過去業力。

因為,錯見之危會引生心的苦受。因此,我們必須糾正這種錯誤見解 (asandiṭṭhitova),轉之為正見(sandiṭṭhiko)。若得正見,即能證入涅槃,悲 傷與哀號亦將止息。

若仍抱持錯見,則悲傷與哀號必將接踵而至。在一切危險當中,墮入錯見之危是最為可怖者(佛陀曾列出二十五種危險,而 asandiṭṭhitova 便是其中之一)。錯見即是「集諦」(苦因),其結果便是招感「苦諦」(苦果)之痛苦生。

錯見之危非他人所致,而是源於錯誤知見。由於未見身心之無常,而誤認其為「人」、「眾生」,這便是其因。這些法已經存在,且佛陀亦已教示過。

我之所以必須解說,是因為你們尚未了解。若墮入苦趣(惡道),想要再回到 善趣,並非易事。如今人類正在受苦,未來亦將墮入輪迴中的惡趣。因遭遇錯 見之危,眾多有情皆已在惡趣之中。

(大多數眾生來到人間,只是為自己未來再生造作地獄、畜生與鬼界。)

正見即是道智(magga ñāṇa)。若證得道智,即能見到涅槃。獲得正見,則集止苦滅;若未得正見,則集增苦生。因此,無論生起何種心念,都要觀其無常。

錯誤知識的危險

1962年7月31日

[尊者依據巴利文詞彙「asandiṭṭhitova」闡述此講,其意為錯誤見解的危險。經文中提及了25種危險,而「asandiṭṭhitova」即為其中之一。它也可以翻譯為錯誤觀點、錯誤知識和錯誤認知。人類以錯誤的方式看待、觀點、認知和理解事物,從而在社會中造成諸多痛苦和問題。

其中一些源於教育、娛樂、信仰、政治、經濟,甚至來自科學和技術。正確的 看待、觀點、認知和理解帶來快樂、和平與安全。錯誤的看待、觀點、認知和 理解則帶來痛苦、問題和不安全感。]

佛陀提醒我們要活在正念和明覺之中(sati 和 sampajañña)。認知生起的法(dhamma),即是正念(例如,心)。它們是否保持這種狀態?還是消逝?僅以般若(paññā)觀察它們。

因此,保持正念並以般若觀察。佛陀不得不提醒我們,這非常重要。藉由正念, 我們知道存在的事物,然後以般若認知其消逝。般若認知心的生起和消逝。如 此一來,心識的過程便無法持續。

如果心識的過程持續,您將處於苦(dukkha)之中。如果心識的過程被切斷,您將證得至樂的涅槃(sukha nibbāna)。如果我這樣說,您可能不太清楚。因此,請看緣起圖(DA chart)。藉由看到心的消逝,第二部分將不會與第三部分連接。

這被稱為道(magga,知識),因為煩惱(kilesa)將不會生起。隨著集(samudaya)的止息,第四部分不會生起。「渴愛止息即涅槃」(taṇhā nirodho nibbānaṁ)——渴愛的止息即是涅槃。「苦止息即涅槃」(dukkha nirodho nibbānaṁ)——苦的止息即是涅槃。

否則,它將變成「渴愛生起即苦生起」(taṇhā samudaya dukkha samudayo)。即「渴愛緣取」(taṇhā paccaya upadanaṁ...),「有緣生」(bhāva paccaya jāti)。如果您能以這種方式切斷它,您就能證得涅槃。這是集諦和苦諦的止息。

似乎涅槃離我們很近。身心的痛苦發生在每個人身上。為什麼呢?因為過去我們造作了苦諦,並將其帶到此處。然後,從苦諦中,苦便滋長出來。(就像苦樹長出苦果一樣。)

佛陀提醒我們不要陷入錯誤見解的危險。因為某人,我才受苦。不要讓這種錯誤的觀點生起。有了錯誤的觀點,心和色(mind and form)消失,而人或眾生則生起。這是錯誤見解的危險。它之所以發生,是因為沒有看到無常。

將不存在的事物視為存在;痛苦、悲傷、哀號、哭泣和失眠便會產生。這些並 非過去業(kamma)的原因。它們是遭遇錯誤見解的危險所致。因此,不要將 罪責歸咎於過去的業。

因為,有了錯誤見解的危險,精神上的痛苦便會生起。因此,我們必須修正錯誤見解的危險(asandiṭṭhitova),使其轉變為正確的見解(sandiṭṭhiko)。有了正確的見解,我們將證得涅槃,悲傷和哀號也將止息。

有了錯誤的見解,悲傷和哀號便會隨之而來。在所有危險之中,陷入錯誤觀點的危險是最可怕的(佛陀提到了25種危險,而「asandiṭṭhitova」即為其中之一)。錯誤見解是集諦(苦的原因)。它將導致痛苦的苦諦(苦的結果)產生。

錯誤見解的危險並非他人所造。它來自錯誤的知識。它之所以生起,是因為沒有看到身心過程的無常,反而將其視為人或眾生。這些法(dhamma)早已存在,並由佛陀所教導。

我必須描述它,因為你們對它們一無所知。在墮入痛苦的惡趣之後,很難再回 到快樂的善趣。在當下,人類正在受苦,並將在輪迴中墮入惡趣。許多人身處 惡趣,是因為他們遭遇了錯誤見解的危險。

(大多數眾生來到這個人間,並在地球上為他們未來的轉世創造地獄、畜生和 餓鬼道。) 正確的見解是道智(magga ñāṇa)。如果您證得道智,您將見到涅槃。隨著正確見解的證得,集止息,苦結束。若沒有證得正確的見解,集增長,苦也滋長。因此,無論生起何種心,都應觀其無常。

Non-conflict and Non-attachment

8th August 1962

[Sayadaw based this talk on the Madhupiṇḍika Sutta of Majjhima Nikāya (MN.18 Madhupiṇḍikasuttaṃ). In the sutta, the Buddha answered Daṇḍapāṇi, the Sakyan who asked him about his doctrine and proclamation. Still there are a lot of Buddhists don't know exactly what the Buddha's doctrine and proclamation.

Some even misinterpret his teaching, such as taking Nibbāna as atta. Interpret as the root sequence of all, with practice return to oneness, non-dualism, the first cause, etc. Therefore, it can be confused or mistaken with Hinduism. To understand the teaching of the Buddha clearly, we need to study the Sutta Nikāya.]

There is nothing more important than to end dukkha. Dukkha sacca exists in this khandha in fullness. We have the desire (chanda) to be free from it. But without getting the knowledge of liberation, it becomes difficult. So I'll give you the way to end dukkha.

First, have to know about dukkha. Second, look for the source of dukkha and to know where it comes from. Third, cut off dukkha from where it comes. Fourth, what the result of cutting it is (Nirodha—cessation).

First, I'll talk about the knowing of dukkha. Don't go and look for dukkha elsewhere. Now having this khandha and listening to this talk is not sukha, but only dukkha. This is only in the level of perception. For the wisdom level, watch and observe the khandha with the normal breathing. It will show you many things.

These are abandoning its own nature. After establishing samādhi, observe the khandha with mindfulness and wisdom. And have to know that whatever arises now is truth of dukkha. Let us look for the source of dukkha. It comes from taṇhā (craving) by making prayers to become human beings.

We caught the culprit of samudaya sacca. Fulfilling our prayers is dukkha sacca. Making prayers with desire is samudaya sacca. Physical and mental sufferings arise from affection. These are happening now in the present of dukkha and samudaya saccas. Affection and sorrow are samudaya and dukkha.

In the whole day, we are turning around with samudaya and dukkha that the Buddha has not arisen for us. The Buddha of magga sacca has not arisen to us. Therefore, we can't expect the nirodha sacca of the ending of dukkha sacca. From the tree of dukkha, arises the seed of samudaya. From the seed of samudaya, the tree of dukkha grows out again.

Your situations are only having fuels and fire. Extinguish fire and peace does still not arise. It's very terrible indeed. Not knowing the arising of dukkha and samudaya is ignorance (avijjā). Also don't know where nirodha and magga is ignorance. Don't know the four Noble Truths is ignorance. Let's talk about magga and nirodha saccas.

(Sayadaw told the story of Daṇḍapāṇi, the friend of Ven. Devadatta. So he had no respect for the Buddha). He asked the Buddha, "What is your ascetic's doctrine? And what do you proclaim?" The Buddha answered, "Not conflict with anyone is my doctrine. Usually teach people to cut off passion for the realms of existence."

The Buddha later recounted this incident to the monks. And then they went to ask Ven. Mahā Kaccāyana for the answer. (The Buddha did not explain his short teaching to the monks and left.)

Ven. Mahā Kaccāyana delivered them the vipassanā dhamma. After seeing something pleasant and pleasant feeling arises. After that notice it with perception, and then thinking with taṇhā, māna and diṭṭhi (i.e., craving, conceit and wrong view) arise.

[The process here is:

contact (sense doors + sense object + contact = consciousness) \rightarrow feeling \rightarrow perception \rightarrow thinking \rightarrow the perception and categories of objectification/papañca (i.e., taṇhā, māna and diṭṭhi)].

Therefore, $tanh\bar{a}$, $m\bar{a}na$ and ditthi dhammas are coming from seeing, hearing, etc. According to D. A. process, sec ② connects with sec ③ (i.e., consciousness... feeling \rightarrow craving, conceit, wrong view).

(Sayadaw continued the instruction of cittānupassanā). If seeing consciousness arises, contemplate its impermanence. And papañca dies and samudaya ceases. Magga sacca and nirodha sacca arise. Papañca nirodho nibbānaṁ—cessation of papañca is Nibbāna.

So Nibbāna is also called ni-papañca. With the contemplation of impermanence, the four Noble Truths arise together. If contemplating the arising dhamma, magga and nirodha will arise.

These are our friends. We should associate with them. Without contemplation, dukkha and samudaya arise. These are our enemies. We shouldn't associate with them. The time without contemplation is a fool. The time with contemplation is a wise person (see The Bāla Paṇḍita Sutta in the Saṃyutta Nikāya).

非衝突與無執著

1962年8月8日

【本場開示是以《中部經典》第18經《蜜丸喻經》(Madhupiṇḍika Sutta)為基礎而說明。在經中,佛陀回答了釋迦族人丹達波尼(Daṇḍapāṇi)關於其教義與宣說的問題。至今,仍有許多佛教徒未能準確理解佛陀的教法與所說。甚至有人錯解其教義,例如將涅槃認為是「我(atta)」,或誤以為修行是為了回歸某種根本的一體性、非二元論、最初因等觀念。因此容易與印度教相混淆。若欲正確理解佛陀的教導,必須深入學習經藏(Sutta Nikāya)。】

世間沒有任何事比止息苦更為重要。苦諦(dukkha sacca)在此五蘊之身中充滿存在。我們渴望(chanda)脫離它。然而,若未得解脫智,便難以辦到。因此,我將為你們指出止息苦的方法。

首先,須知「苦」的本質。其次,要探究苦的根源,明瞭它從何而來。第三,要從其根源處將苦斷除。第四,要明白斷苦之後的結果——即「滅」 (nirodha)。

首先談談對「苦」的認知。別去他處尋找「苦」。今得此五蘊身、聆聽此開示,其實並非樂,而是「苦」。這只是從「知覺層次」的認知。若欲達到智慧層次,則應以平常呼吸為基礎觀察此身,它會展現許多現象。

這些現象都顯示其本質是無常。當你建立起定(samādhi)後,再以正念與智慧 觀照此身。你將了知,凡是當下所生起的,皆是苦的真理(苦諦)。接著來探 討苦的根源。苦來自「渴愛」(taṇhā),是我們於過去因欲望而祈願投生為人。

我們已捉住了「集諦」的根本——是「渴望」使我們投生;而祈願實現之時,即成為「苦諦」。以欲望造願,是「集諦」;而其結果,即是身心之苦。這些苦,如今當下即在發生——即是苦與集的展現。愛與憂悲,亦即是集與苦。

整日之中,我們都在苦與集之間輪轉,彷彿佛陀未曾出現於我們的生命中。「道諦」(magga sacca)之佛尚未出現在我們心中,因此亦無從期望能達至「滅諦」(nirodha sacca)——即苦的終止。

從「苦」之樹中,生出「集」之種子;而從「集」之種子,又再次長出「苦」之樹。

你們如今的狀況,就像是「只剩燃料與火焰」的狀態,即便熄滅火焰,和平也尚未出現——這真是極其可怕。不了解苦與集的生起,就是「無明」

(avijjā);同樣,若不知道與滅,也是一種無明。不知四聖諦者,即是處於無明之中。讓我們接著談道與滅。

(尊者講述丹達波尼的故事:此人是提婆達多的朋友,因此對佛陀毫無恭敬。)他問佛陀:「你的沙門教義是什麼?你宣說的是什麼?」佛陀回答說:「我之教義是不與任何人爭論。我平日教導人們要斷除對諸有界(輪迴界)的貪著。」

佛陀事後將此事告訴比丘們。然而,祂並未向比丘解釋這段簡短的開示便離去。

比丘們遂去請教大迦旃延尊者(Ven. Mahā Kaccāyana),由他為眾人詳細解釋。 尊者以「觀智法」(vipassanā dhamma)為其開示內容:

當眼見可意之物時,悅受即生;接著,對其作出知覺;之後,因貪愛、我慢與 邪見(taṇhā、māna、diṭṭhi)而起思惟。

【此中所示之歷程如下:

接觸(六根 + 六境 + 接觸 = 識) \rightarrow 受 \rightarrow 想 \rightarrow 思 \rightarrow 諸種概念投射與增益(即 渴愛、我慢、邪見,合稱 *papañca*)】

因此,tanha、mana、ditthi 三法,皆從「見、聞等六識」而來。依據「緣起法」的過程中,即是第二支與第三支的相連——即「識…受 \rightarrow 渴愛、我慢、邪見」。

(尊者續說心隨觀 cittānupassanā 的修行方法)若有眼識生起,即觀其無常;如此,「虛妄分別」(papañca)即滅,苦因亦隨之止息(samudaya ceases)。此時,「道諦」與「滅諦」便會生起。「虛妄止息即是涅槃 (papañca nirodho nibbānaṁ)」。

因此,涅槃也被稱為「無虛妄」(*ni-papañca*)。當你如實觀察無常時,四聖 諦將一同顯現。若能如是觀察當下所生法,道與滅亦會同時生起。

這些法是我們的善友,應與之相應。不修觀者,則是與苦與集相應,這些便是 我們的敵人,不應與之為伍。**無觀照之時,即是愚者;有觀照之時,即是智者** (參見《愚與智者經》,《相應部》)。

無衝突與無執著

1962年8月8日

[尊者以《中部尼迦耶》(Majjhima Nikāya,MN.18《蜜丸經》)為基礎講述此法。經中,佛陀回答了釋迦族的檀陀波尼(Daṇḍapāṇi)的提問,他詢問佛陀的教義和宣告。然而,仍有許多佛教徒並不確切了解佛陀的教義和宣告。

有些人甚至誤解他的教導,例如將涅槃視為神我(atta)。將其解釋為萬物的根源序列,透過修行回歸一體、非二元論、第一因等等。因此,它可能與印度教混淆或誤解。為了清楚地理解佛陀的教導,我們需要研讀《經藏》(Sutta Nikāya)。]

沒有比終止苦(dukkha)更重要的事了。苦諦(dukkha sacca)完整地存在於此 五蘊(khandha)之中。我們渴望(chanda)從中解脫。但若沒有獲得解脫的知 識,這將變得困難。因此,我將向您講述終止苦的方法。 首先,必須了解苦。其次,尋找苦的根源,並了解其從何而來。第三,從苦的根源切斷苦。第四,切斷苦的結果是什麼(滅諦,Nirodha—止息)。

首先,我將談論對苦的認知。不要到別處尋找苦。現在擁有這個五蘊並聆聽此講,並非樂(sukha),而是唯有苦。這僅在感知的層次上。對於智慧的層次,以正常的呼吸觀察五蘊。它將向您展示許多事物。

這些都是捨棄其本性。建立定(samādhi)之後,以正念和智慧觀察五蘊。並且必須知道,現在生起的任何事物都是苦諦。讓我們尋找苦的根源。它來自渴愛(taṇhā),透過祈求成為人類。

我們抓住了集諦(samudaya sacca)的罪魁禍首。實現我們的祈求是苦諦。以欲望祈求是集諦。身心的痛苦來自於愛戀。這些是現在正在發生的苦諦和集諦。愛戀和悲傷是集諦和苦諦。

整天,我們都在集諦和苦諦中打轉,佛陀並未為我們而生起。道諦(magga sacca)的佛陀並未為我們而生起。因此,我們無法期望苦諦止息的滅諦(nirodha sacca)。從苦的樹上,生起集的種子。從集的種子中,苦的樹再次生長。

你們的情況只有燃料和火焰。熄滅火焰,平靜仍然不會生起。這確實非常可怕。 不了解苦和集的生起是無明(avijjā)。也不知道滅諦和道諦在哪裡也是無明。 不了解四聖諦是無明。讓我們談論道諦和滅諦。

(尊者講述了提婆達多尊者(Ven. Devadatta)的朋友檀陀波尼的故事。因此,他對佛陀毫無敬意。)他問佛陀:「你的沙門的教義是什麼?你宣告什麼?」佛陀回答:「不與任何人衝突是我的教義。通常教導人們切斷對存在領域的熱情。」

佛陀後來向僧侶們重述了這件事。然後他們去向摩訶迦旃延尊者(Ven. Mahā Kaccāyana)尋求答案。(佛陀沒有向僧侶們解釋他的簡短教導就離開了。)

摩訶迦旃延尊者向他們講述了內觀法(vipassanā dhamma)。在看到令人愉悅的事物並生起愉悅的感受之後。接著以感知注意它,然後以渴愛、慢、邪見(taṇhā,māna,diṭṭhì)思考,便會生起。

[此處的過程是:

接觸(六根+六塵+接觸=識)→感受→感知→思考→戲論(papañca)的感知和範疇(即渴愛、慢、邪見)]。

因此,渴愛、慢、邪見的法來自於看、聽等。根據緣起(D.A.)的過程,第二部分與第三部分連接(即,識…感受→渴愛、慢、邪見)。

(尊者繼續心隨觀的指導)。如果生起見識,觀其無常。戲論便會消亡,集便會止息。道諦和滅諦便會生起。「戲論止息即涅槃」(papañca nirodho nibbānaṁ)——戲論的止息即是涅槃。

因此,涅槃也被稱為無戲論(ni-papañca)。透過觀無常,四聖諦同時生起。如果觀生起的法,道諦和滅諦便會生起。

這些是我們的朋友。我們應該與他們交往。沒有觀,苦和集便會生起。這些是 我們的敵人。我們不應該與他們交往。沒有觀的時間是愚者。有觀的時間是智 者(參見《相應部》的《愚者智者經》)。

Development with Contemplation

8th August 1962

Magga—the path factors have to be developed. Be developed with contemplation on one of the five khandhas. If you know how to use this khandha, it becomes a valuable thing. If you know how to develop it, you will arrive to the other shore of Nibbāna.

If not, will sink in the four apāya bhūmis—woeful planes. A person who knows how to use it will have benefit. A person who doesn't know how to use it will be in trouble. With the contemplation, what'll happen? You all have ignorance and craving. With a lot of contemplation, ignorance becomes thinner and craving drying up. Both of them connect with the taints (āsava).

Therefore, āsava is extinct (avijjāsava and kāmāsava). If you are discerning anicca, contemplate anicca. With dukkha and contemplate dukkha, with anatta and contemplate anatta, etc. And then āsava will be extinct. If you ask me the time span of when it'll become extinct and it depends on you.

If your kilesa and taṇhā (defilements and craving) are thick and you'll get it slow. You'll get it quicker if your kilesa and taṇhā (defilements and craving) thinner. In the Khandhavagga Saṃyutta, the Buddha taught the Vāsijaṭa Sutta (The adze handle, SN.22.101 Vāsijaṭasuttaṃ). It was like the wooden handle, with a lot of striking (using) and eroded slowly.

We can't say how much it is eroded. But it's sure that it's eroded. The Buddha asked us to contemplate. But you all are making prayers and wishes. (Sayadaw continued to talk the simile of a hen and her eggs which included in the same sutta).

With a lot of contemplation, the egg shell of ignorance becomes thinner, taṇhā liquid becomes dryer, and knowledge becomes sharper. So don't blame it on your pāramitās (perfection comes from practice).

With the contemplation of one of the five khandhas and get the three results. You can ask for the 31 realms of existences. These are dead bodies. With contemplation, you get Nibbāna. It's not dying. If you don't want to die in anyway, just follow the way of undying.

The duties of a hen are spreading its wings on the eggs, giving her body heat to the eggs, and giving its smell to the eggs. In accordance with the smell and different beings appear.

Only by performing these three duties, the outcome is sure. You also have to contemplate the khandha with anicca, dukkha and anatta. Vipāka vaṭṭa—the result of the round of existence is like the egg.

The shell is like ignorance. The liquid inside the egg is like taṇhā. The claws of chick becoming sharper are like knowledge (ñāṇa). That the chick come out by breaking the shell is like freedom from the cycle of the round of existences—vipāka vaṭṭas.

修觀之進展

1962年8月8日

「道」(Magga)——即八正道的各項道支,必須透過修習來開展。應當以觀照五蘊之一來修習。若你懂得如何善用此五蘊之身,它便成為一種極具價值之物;若懂得如何加以修發,最終將抵達彼岸——涅槃。

若不知如何修習,則會沈沒於四惡趣(四阿怕耶界,apāya bhūmis)之中。懂得善用此身者,能得大利益;不懂得運用者,則將招致災難。

若以觀照來修習,會有什麼結果呢?你們眾生本具有無明與渴愛,但若多多修習觀照,無明便會逐漸減弱,渴愛也將逐漸乾枯。這兩者皆與「漏」(āsava)相連。

因此,「漏」也會隨之滅盡——包括「無明漏」(avijjāsava)與「欲漏」 (kāmāsava)。若你正覺知「無常」,便應觀「無常」;若是苦,便觀「苦」; 若是無我,便觀「無我」——如此等等。那麼,「漏」便將被滅除。 若你問我,這要花多長時間才能滅盡?這取決於你自己。

若你的煩惱(kilesa)與渴愛(tanha)深重,那麼進展便會緩慢;若你的煩惱 與渴愛較為微薄,則進展會更快。

在《相應部·蘊相應》中,佛陀曾教導《斧柄經》(Vāsijaṭa Sutta, SN 22.101)。就如斧頭的木柄,因長時間反覆使用,會慢慢被磨蝕。

我們無法確定它磨損了多少,但可以確定——它確實在磨損。佛陀教導我們要 修觀;但你們卻總是在祈願、發願。

(尊者接著提及經中所用的譬喻:母雞與雞蛋。)

若常常修觀,則無明之蛋殼會變薄,渴愛之液體會乾涸,智慧之光會變得更銳利。因此,切勿歸咎於自己的波羅蜜不夠——波羅蜜來自於實修!

以觀照五蘊之一來修習,將會獲得三種果報。你們若向三十一有求生,那些都是「屍身」。若以觀照修行,則可得涅槃——那才是「非死」之法。若你不想 死於任何一界,那就依循這條「不死之道」。

母雞的職責是:以雙翅護蛋、以身體給予溫度、以自身氣味涵養雞蛋。因氣味 相應,不同種類的眾生從蛋中出生。

唯有圓滿完成這三項職責,結果才會確定出現。你們也必須以「無常、苦、無 我」來觀照此五蘊身。

「異熟輪」(vipāka vaṭṭa)——即業報輪迴的果報,如同一顆雞蛋。

蛋殼象徵無明,蛋液象徵渴愛,雛雞之爪變得銳利則象徵智慧(ñāṇa)。小雞破殼而出,即象徵從輪迴業報輪中獲得解脫——超脫於「異熟輪」。

透過觀照的發展

1962年8月8日

道(magga)——道支必須被發展。透過對五蘊之一的觀照來發展。如果您知道如何運用這個五蘊,它將成為一件有價值的東西。如果您知道如何發展它,您將到達涅槃的彼岸。

否則,將沉淪於四惡趣(apāya bhūmis)——悲慘的境界。知道如何運用它的人將獲得利益。不知道如何運用它的人將陷入困境。透過觀照,會發生什麼?你們都有無明和渴愛。透過大量的觀照,無明會變得稀薄,渴愛會逐漸乾涸。兩者都與漏(āsava)相連。

因此,漏被滅除(無明漏和欲漏)。如果您在觀照無常,就觀無常。觀苦就觀苦,觀無我(anatta)就觀無我,等等。然後漏將被滅除。如果您問我滅除的時間長度,這取決於您。

如果您的煩惱(kilesa)和渴愛(taṇhā)濃厚,您將獲得得較慢。如果您的煩惱和渴愛稀薄,您將獲得得更快。《蘊相應》(Khandhavagga Saṃyutta)中,佛陀教導了《斧柄經》(Vāsijaṭa Sutta,SN.22.101 Vāsijaṭasuttaṁ)。它就像木製的柄,經過多次敲擊(使用)而逐漸磨損。

我們無法說它磨損了多少。但可以肯定的是,它正在磨損。佛陀要求我們觀照。但你們都在祈禱和許願。(尊者繼續講述同經中的母雞和雞蛋的比喻)。

透過大量的觀照,無明的蛋殼變得稀薄,渴愛的液體變得乾燥,知識變得敏銳。 因此,不要將其歸咎於您的波羅蜜(pāramitās,來自修行的圓滿)。

透過觀照五蘊之一,獲得三個結果。您可以祈求三十一有。這些都是死屍。透 過觀照,您將獲得涅槃。它不是死亡。如果您不想以任何方式死亡,只需遵循 不死之道。

母雞的職責是在雞蛋上展開翅膀,將體溫傳遞給雞蛋,並將其氣味傳遞給雞蛋。 根據氣味,不同的眾生出現。

只有執行這三項職責,結果才是確定的。您也必須以無常、苦、無我觀照五蘊。 果報輪迴(vipāka vaṭṭa)——存在的輪迴的結果就像雞蛋。

蛋殼就像無明。雞蛋內的液體就像渴愛。雛雞變得鋒利的爪子就像知識 (ñāṇa)。雛雞破殼而出就像從存在的輪迴——果報輪迴中解脫。

Mountains of Bones and Oceans of Blood

2nd to 3rd September 1962

T1

[In the book of causation, Nidānavagga, there was a chapter called Without Discoverable Beginning, Anamatagga saṃyutta. The Buddha gave some similes on the subject of Saṁsāra—round of existence without discoverable beginning.

Some of them were: ① Tears shed by a living being in Saṁsāra was more than the four great oceans. ② The mothers' milk a being had drunk was more than four great oceans. ③ The blood a being had shed by beheading was more than the four great oceans.

After the Buddha passed away, some Buddhist philosophers or even practitioners postulated theory of the beginning of Samsāra or everything, the first cause. In the time of the Buddha, some of the 62 wrong views came from practices and miscalculation.]

If you are making merits (puñña) based on craving (taṇhā), it becomes black and white mixed kamma. Therefore, you'll get the human existence. With only taṇhā, you can't get it. Merit is white and the desire for becoming is black. So it becomes samudaya sacca. Mostly monks are using samudaya sacca to teach people as good. Samudaya has to be abandoned.

(Sayadaw was very different from others. Always teaching people to transcend dukkha for whatever wholesome kamma they are doing).

Why do I say it's samudaya? Because it's governed by ignorance (avijjā). People who know this point will do merits for not wanting becoming. If you have done samudaya sacca, it'll give the result of dukkha. Only cutting off the round of existence (vaṭṭa), will realize Nibbāna.

Now people are making merits for connection of vaṭṭas. With kilesa vaṭṭa, kamma vaṭṭa arises. With kamma vaṭṭa, vipāka vaṭṭa is sure to arise. (Defilements lead to actions and actions lead to existences.) That people are making merits for wanting to have a long life and good health mean including taṇhā with the affectionate khandha.

When making the merits, we can't realize about it. Only by contemplating about them with truth, we know that as dukkha. Importance of right view is becoming clear. Even merit is dukkha, no need to mention about demerit. Then, someone says, let us make merits for good fortune.

This is clinging to the khandha. All are based on the attachment to khandha, not including to come out from the vaṭṭas. We are always doing the avijjā paccaya saṅkhāra—action with ignorance. Therefore, not anyone of them will realize Nibbāna if 100,000 human beings die. Rise and fall of the khandha is the truth of dukkha.

Therefore, khandha is dukkha sacca. You all said that it was taught by the Buddha. But truth always exists without the Buddha. The Buddha only explained it with names. Truth had existed before the Buddha. Therefore, you have to remember that whenever you have khandha, dukkha exists.

Whatever arises from khandha is dukkha sacca. By knowing impermanence, diṭṭhi falls away. After knowing the cause and effect, doubt falls away. After diṭṭhi falls away and with contemplation is a cūḷa-sotāpanna. With the contemplation and discerning of impermanence will become sotāpanna.

T2

If you don't know the truth, your bones will be higher than Mt. Vepulla (at Rājagaha). Buddhas had arisen in the world as many as the numbers of sand grains in the Ganges River. Now you are discerning anicca and knowing dukkha sacca. You'll not die again. Because section ② is not connecting with section ③ (i.e., viññāṇa... vedanā >/ taṇhā...kamma).

By seeing the arising and falling dukkha, ñāṇa cut off saṁsāra. Saṁsāra is long because we don't know dukkha sacca with the Path knowledge. Following in the ways of traditions, our bones were piled up like mountains. (Here traditions mean worldly matters, dāna, sīla, and samatha practices, etc.)

Our khandhas rise and fall. Seeing impermanence is seeing dukkha. By seeing dukkha, taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma die out. No more birth (jāti), ageing (jarā) and death (maraṇa) arise. Therefore, the truth to Nibbāna is to know the Noble Truth. Making worldly developments are the matters of bones developments (Even may be worse than bones developments because human beings misuse them in unwholesome ways. The results are painful births).

Especially today you have to remember these things. If you contemplate and discern impermanence of the arising dhamma, section ① of ignorance (avijjā) becomes knowledge (vijjā). And mental formation (saṅkhāra) becomes non-mental formation (vi-saṅkhāra).

Also you'll know the section ② as dukkha sacca (i.e., viññāṇa...vedanā = the five khandhas). And also it cuts off section ③ and ④ not to arise (i.e., taṇhā, upādāna, kamma \rtimes jāti).

The magga (path factors) sees dukkha sacca and cut off D. A. cycle of section ① to section ④ and it can't recycle again. Section ① and ② are cut off by knowing dukkha. Section ③ and ④ are cut off by abandoning. Therefore, the whole circle is vanished. Before we are running in circle; now the circular running is cut off.

The circular running of samudaya and dukkha saccas is finished. The cessation of samudaya and dukkha is Nibbāna. They are ceased with the arising of magga and nirodha. The person working with impermanence knows two truths and then abandoning two truths.

Therefore, the circular running show comes to an end. In reality, all the four truths are included in the knowing dukkha sacca with magga sacca. The Buddha has arisen in the world to open the $\tilde{n}\bar{a}$ eyes for not connecting sections ③ and ④, or to cut off sections ② and ③. For a person, the journey is not ending; sorrow and lamentation are always following him.

Craving, clinging and action (taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma) are the dhammas for the extension of saṁsāra. It doesn't matter to reduce your work and eating. But if you reduce the practice or not doing the practice, your bones will pile up like a mountain. It's quite terrible.

Now if you don't practice, your dukkha can't vanish just like the simile given by the Buddha. It was like using a blade of grass dipping into the sea and shaking the water out each time and the sea water would never dry up. The Buddha said these things with his direct penetrative knowledge.

(Sayadaw here warned the audience about the passing away of Henzada U Mya, a well-known business man and a close disciple of him. Nearly a month before he died, Sayadaw met him in Rangoon (Yan-gon) (Yangon) and warned him again for practice. He never took Sayadaw's warning seriously and was always busy with making money. So, Sayadaw now urged his audiences for practice and not wasting their precious time on money.)

骨山血海

1962年9月2日至3日

T1

【在因緣章(*Nidānavagga*)中,有一品名為「無可見起點相應」 (*Anamatagga Saṃyutta*),佛陀在其中以譬喻說明輪廻(*Saṃsāra*)的無始本 質——即無可尋覓之起始點。

其中幾個譬喻如下:

- ① 眾生於輪迴中所流下的淚水,多過四大海洋;
- ② 所飲之母乳,多過四大海洋;
- ③ 因斷頭流出的血液,多過四大海洋。

佛陀入滅之後,有些佛教哲學家乃至行者,提出關於輪迴起始點或「第一因」 的種種理論。在佛陀時代,也有部分「六十二種邪見」正是因修行中的錯誤計 算與推論所產生。】 如果你是基於「渴愛」(taṇhā)而行善(puñña),那麼這種業便成為「黑白夾雜」之業。因此將招感為人身。僅有渴愛,是無法得到人身的。功德為白,對「有」的欲求為黑,所以這便成為「集諦」(samudaya sacca)。如今多數比丘以「集諦」為善教導眾生,然而「集」應是應該捨棄的。

(莫哥尊者與一般不同,他總是教導人們,無論行何種善業,目的皆應為超越 「苦」而非延續輪迴。)

我為何說這是「集諦」?因為它受到「無明」(avijjā)支配。若有人真正明白這一點,便會為「不想再有」而行善。若你所造者是「集諦」,它的果報必是「苦」。唯有截斷「輪迴」(vatta),方能證得涅槃。

如今人們所作功德,是為連接三輪(煩惱輪、業輪、異熟輪)而行。因有「煩惱輪」(kilesa vaṭṭa),才生起「業輪」(kamma vaṭṭa);因有「業輪」,「異熟輪」(vipāka vaṭṭa)必然隨之而生。(即:煩惱生行、行感果。)

人們行善是為了長壽與健康,實則是摻雜了對五蘊的渴愛與貪著。

在造功德的當下,我們往往無法察覺其真相,唯有以「真理」作觀,方知它是「苦」。由此可知正見之重要。即便是善業也是「苦」,那更不必說惡業了。當人說:「我們行善以求好報」,這即是對「蘊」的執取。

這一切皆以對「蘊」的愛執為基礎,與出離「輪迴」毫無關聯。我們總在造作「無明緣行」(avijjā paccaya saṅkhāra)——即以無明為因的造作。因此,縱有十萬人死去,其中亦無一人能證得涅槃。五蘊的生滅,即是真實的「苦」。

因此,**五蘊即是「苦諦」**。你們說這是佛所教導的,然而「真理」的存在不因佛陀而有,佛陀只是給它命名而已。在佛陀出世前,真理早已存在。因此,你們要牢記:只要有「五蘊」,就有「苦」。

凡從「五蘊」生起者,皆是「苦諦」。了知無常,即能破除邪見(diṭṭhi);明白因果,即能斷除疑惑。破除邪見並能作觀者,即是「小入流者」(cūḷa-sotāpanna);進一步觀照無常者,將成為「入流聖者」(sotāpanna)。

T2

若你不了知「真理」,你的骨頭堆積將高過王舍城的毗富羅山(Mt. Vepulla)。過去曾出世的佛陀,數目如恆河沙數。如今你正觀照「無常」,亦 已知「苦諦」,你將不再重生。因為「第二支」將不再連接「第三支」(即識····受 ≠ 渴愛···業)。

透過觀照苦的生滅,智慧能斷輪迴。輪迴之所以漫長,是因我們未曾以「道智」知見「苦諦」。我們跟隨世俗傳統而行善,其結果是骨堆如山(這裡的「傳統」指世俗事務,如布施、持戒、禪定等)。

我們的「五蘊」不斷生滅。見無常即是見苦。見苦即能令渴愛、取、業滅去;便不再有生(jāti)、老(jarā)、死(maraṇa)之生起。因此,通往涅槃之道,即是知見「聖諦」。追求世間的發展,只是造作更多的「骨山」(甚至可能更糟,因人們常以不善之方式濫用成果,導致痛苦的再生)。

特別是今天,你必須牢記這些事。若你能觀照所生法的無常,「第一支」的「無明」將轉為「明」($vijj\bar{a}$);「行」($sankh\bar{a}ra$)將轉為「非行」($visankh\bar{a}ra$)。

你也會了知「第二支」即是「苦諦」(即識···受,為五蘊)。並且能阻斷「第三支」與「第四支」的生起(即渴愛、取、業不再導致生)。

「道智」(magga)見「苦諦」,並切斷從第一支到第四支的「緣起環流」, 使其無法再循環。第一與第二支因了知苦而斷,第三與第四支因捨離而斷。因 此整個輪迴圓環消失。我們曾在圓環中奔走,如今這個奔走被截斷。

「集諦」與「苦諦」的輪轉已結束;「集」與「苦」的止息即是「涅槃」。這是由「道」與「滅」的生起所致。觀無常者,能知二聖諦,亦能捨棄二聖諦。

因此,這個輪轉的「戲碼」也就此終止。事實上,**四聖諦皆包含於「以道知苦」之中**。佛陀出世於世間,是為了開啟我們的「智慧之眼」,使「第三支」與「第四支」不再連結,或切斷「第二支」與「第三支」。

若對一個人而言,輪迴之旅未曾止息,那麼憂與悲將永遠緊隨其後。

渴愛、執取與造作(taṇhā, upādāna, kamma)是令輪迴增長的法。減少工作與飲食並無妨,但若你減少修行,或根本不修行,你的骨頭將再次堆積如山,這是極其可怕的事。

若你不修行,你的「苦」將無法滅除——就如佛陀所說的譬喻:用一根草插入 大海,每次取出時抖掉水,即便如此不斷重複,大海之水也永遠不會乾涸。佛 陀所言,皆是以「親證智」所說。 (在此,尊者警示大眾:恒扎達的烏彌亞先生———位知名商人,亦為尊者之親近弟子——已經過世。在他過世前將近一個月,尊者於仰光與他會面時再度叮嚀其修行,但他從未認真對待,只是一味忙於賺錢。因此,尊者如今勸誡在座大眾:莫再虛耗寶貴時光於金錢之上,務必要修行。)

骨山血海

1962年9月2日至3日

T1

[在因緣論的《尼陀那品》(Nidānavagga)中,有一章節稱為《不可知始經》 (Anamatagga saṃyutta)。佛陀針對輪迴(Saṃsāra)——不可知始的生死輪迴, 給出了一些譬喻。

其中一些是:①眾生在輪迴中所流的眼淚,比四大海還要多。②眾生所飲的母乳,比四大海還要多。③眾生被斬首所流的血,比四大海還要多。

佛陀涅槃後,一些佛教哲學家,甚至是修行者,提出了輪迴或萬物起源、第一因的理論。在佛陀時代,六十二種邪見中的一些,來自於修行和錯誤的推算。]

如果您基於渴愛(taṇhā)造作功德(puñña),它將成為黑白混合的業(kamma)。因此,您將獲得人類的存在。僅憑渴愛,您無法得到它。功德是白色,成為的欲望是黑色。因此,它變成了集諦(samudaya sacca)。大多數僧侶都在使用集諦來教導人們行善。集諦必須被捨棄。

(尊者與其他人非常不同。他總是教導人們超越苦,無論他們做什麼善業。)

我為什麼說它是集諦?因為它受到無明(avijjā)的支配。了解這一點的人,將 為了不欲成為而造作功德。如果您造作了集諦,它將帶來苦的結果。唯有切斷 生死輪迴(vatta),才能證得涅槃。

現在人們為了連接輪迴而造作功德。有了煩惱輪迴(kilesa vaṭṭa),業輪迴(kamma vaṭṭa)便會生起。有了業輪迴,果報輪迴(vipāka vaṭṭa)必然會生起。(煩惱導致行為,行為導致存在。)人們為了想要長壽和健康而造作功德,意味著將渴愛與愛戀的五蘊結合在一起。

在造作功德時,我們無法意識到它。唯有以真理觀照它們,我們才知道那是苦。 正確見解的重要性變得清晰。即使功德也是苦,更不用說惡業了。然後,有人 說,讓我們為了好運而造作功德。

這是執著於五蘊。一切都基於對五蘊的執著,而不是為了脫離輪迴。我們總是在做無明緣行(avijjā paccaya saṅkhāra)——伴隨無明的行為。因此,即使十萬人死亡,他們中也沒有任何人能夠證得涅槃。五蘊的生滅是苦的真理。

因此,五蘊是苦諦。你們都說這是佛陀教導的。但真理始終存在,即使沒有佛陀。佛陀只是用名稱解釋它。真理在佛陀之前就存在了。因此,您必須記住,無論何時擁有五蘊,苦都存在。

從五蘊生起的任何事物都是苦諦。透過認知無常,邪見(diṭṭhi)便會消失。在了解因果之後,疑惑便會消失。邪見消失後,伴隨觀照,便成為小須陀洹(cūḷa-sotāpanna)。伴隨觀照和認知無常,便會成為須陀洹(sotāpanna)。

T2

如果您不了解真理,您的骨頭將比毗富羅山(Vepulla,在王舍城)還要高。世間出現的佛陀,就像恆河中的沙粒一樣多。現在您正在認知無常並了解苦諦。您將不再死亡。因為第二部分沒有與第三部分連接(即,識···受 >/ 渴愛···業)。

透過看到生滅的苦,智(ñāṇa)切斷了輪迴。輪迴之所以漫長,是因為我們不以道智了解苦諦。遵循傳統的方式,我們的骨頭堆積如山。(這裡的傳統意味著世俗之事,布施、持戒和止禪修行等。)

我們的五蘊生滅。看到無常就是看到苦。透過看到苦,渴愛、取、業便會消亡。不再生起生(jāti)、老(jarā)和死(maraṇa)。因此,通往涅槃的真理是了解聖諦。世俗的發展是骨頭發展的事(甚至可能比骨頭發展更糟,因為人類以不善的方式濫用它們。結果是痛苦的出生)。

特別是今天,您必須記住這些事情。如果您觀照並認知生起之法的無常,第一部分的無明(avijjā)將變成知識(vijjā)。行(saṅkhāra)將變成非行(visaṅkhāra)。

您還會將第二部分視為苦諦(即,識…受=五蘊)。並且它還會切斷第三部分和第四部分,使其不再生起(即,渴愛、取、業 ≯ 生)。

道(magga)看到苦諦,並切斷從第一部分到第四部分的緣起循環,它無法再次循環。透過了解苦,第一部分和第二部分被切斷。透過捨棄,第三部分和第四部分被切斷。因此,整個循環都消失了。以前我們在循環中運行;現在循環運行被切斷了。

集諦和苦諦的循環運行結束了。集的止息和苦的止息是涅槃。它們隨著道和滅的生起而止息。以無常修行的人了解兩個真理,然後捨棄兩個真理。

因此,循環運行的表演結束了。實際上,所有四個真理都包含在以道智了解苦諦之中。佛陀出現在世間,是為了開啟智眼,不讓第三部分和第四部分連接,或切斷第二部分和第三部分。對於一個人來說,旅程不會結束;悲傷和哀號總是跟隨著他。

渴愛、取和業(taṇhā,upādāna 和 kamma)是延長輪迴的法。減少您的工作和飲食都沒關係。但是,如果您減少修行或不修行,您的骨頭將堆積如山。這非常可怕。

現在,如果您不修行,您的苦就無法消失,就像佛陀給出的譬喻一樣。它就像 用一根草葉浸入大海,每次都將水抖出來,海水永遠不會乾涸。佛陀以他的直 接洞察智說了這些話。

(尊者在此警告聽眾關於亨扎達吳緬(Henzada U Mya)的逝世,他是一位著名的商人,也是他的親近弟子。在他去世前近一個月,尊者在仰光(Yangon)見到他,並再次警告他要修行。他從未認真對待尊者的警告,總是忙於賺錢。因此,尊者現在敦促他的聽眾修行,不要將寶貴的時間浪費在金錢上。)

A Simile for Nibbāna

7th September 1962

In studying the three Pali Canons (Piṭakas), the main importance is to know the three universal characteristics. Teaching on the 28 matters (forms) are also impermanent.

Condense on the 53 minds are also impermanent. (Here 53 minds are 52 mental factors + 1 consciousness.) In the four Noble Truths, dukkha sacca is the main one. The cessation of dukkha is Nibbāna (nirodha). Samudaya and magga are also impermanent dukkha sacca.

The Buddha's teachings in the 45 years also were on impermanence. At the end of impermanence will discover nirodha. The Buddha said that in the past, at present, and in the future, all the Buddhas were teaching the arising of dukkha and the cessation of dukkha.

Therefore, don't be in too many dhammas and teachers. Just follow this way. And no one can be deviated from the path. We have to change into the ariyan eyes. The eyes given by the parents were for the matters of living and eating. It's not including for reaching Nibbāna. Fix with the ariyan eyes and you will get the ariyan's views.

This view is pure and not mixed with kilesa. Therefore, whatever situations ariyas were in, their minds were unshaken, never worrying, never with affections and free from raga (lust, attachment). We should not reject worldly conventions, either. With the view of no father and mother will commit the heavy kammas.

You get the ariyan eyes if you discern anicca because it's right view. In practice, look with the sammādiṭṭhi eye. Only by seeing anicca, one arrives at right view. This is the view not connects with section ③. If connects with section ③, it becomes wrong view, attachment with wrong view, and actions governed by wrong view.

This is the teaching for becoming a sotāpanna. For once-returner (sakadāgāmin) and non-returner (anāgāmin), the process to deal with is craving, and clinging, actions done with craving.

(Sayadaw continued to explain the five maggas and how they connected in practice.) Right view and right thought can't be separated. They are like the eyes and glasses. Without right thought, one can't get right view. If you discern impermanence, include these two wisdom factors. You can't discern them only with two of them.

Mindfulness reminds you to look at here. Samādhi not let your head moving around but turn your eyes straight toward the object. If viriya not pushing it toward the object of impermanence, it can't go there. Therefore, if you are discerning impermanence, you get the five path factors.

Ekacitta sampayutta—mind can be alive with one only. Therefore, you see the death of your own mind. Before not fixing with the ariyan eyes, you didn't see your own death. Mind can't be shown with dimensions (pamāṇa). It can be sensed that its own existence is clear to us. Knowing the existence to non-existence is the view of the ariyas.

This is the view of purity. You can say right view is the ariyan view. In the whole samsāra, you only saw other people's deaths but never had been your own. Now you see your own asubha, dukkha, anatta, anicca, and dukkha sacca with the ariyan eyes.

The worldly brahma gods with their divine eyes can see a small needle on the earth. But they don't have the ariyan eyes that can't see their own impermanent khandhas. You will become disenchantment with it if you see your own deaths moment to moment. At the time of not wanting these deaths, all of them disappear.

If you arrive at this point, see and know that there is a place without deaths. With the contemplation, khandhas disappear. Seeing the impermanence is the eyes of the disciple of the ariya. Not seeing deaths is the eyes of ariya.

That no khandha exists is khandha nirodho nibbānam—The cessation of the khandha is Nibbāna. Section ② (i.e., the five khandhas) not exists. These are death elements. The reason of not seeing deaths is the cessation of section ② connecting section ③ (i.e., from viññāṇa ...to ... kamma).

Only Nibbāna and magga ñāṇa are leaving behind. Section ①, ②, ③, and ④, all are ceased. All of them are samudaya and dukkha saccas. The whole cycle of D. A. process is teaching for someone not in practice. The whole cycle of D. A. process is ended for someone in practice. After the contemplation of D. A. process and becoming a Buddha, he knew its beginning and the end of it.

I'll talk about Nibbāna. Dāna, sīla, and samatha practices are for dying. With the vipassanā magga dhamma, get the undying Nibbāna. With the saṅkhata dhammas (conditioned phenomena), you get the asaṅkhata dhamma (unconditioned). This is the reason why Nibbāna is difficult to understand because with the conditions to get the unconditioned.

(Sayadaw explained about Nibbāna with the simile of digging a cave. It was profound. During the Second World War, jet fighter planes came to bomb people. So they had to dig caves in the mountain area for safety). The cave is not existing in the past, present, and future.

It appears by digging. The digging is like seeing impermanence. The rock fragments are khandhas. The empty cave is like Nibbāna, without khandhas.

The true refuge is of unconditioned—asankhata. Impermanence and the rock fragments are conditions—sankhata. The empty cave (Nibbāna) and the rock fragments (khandhas) are not the same.

[This simile of Nibbāna looked very simple, but profound and easy to understand the nature of Nibbāna.

Nibbāna does exist for someone who practices. It doesn't exist beforehand as some Buddhists think. (For example, an original mind, etc.) The Buddha said to

Rohitassa Devaputta to look for Nibbāna in the two armed-length body. In one of his talks, Sayadaw said Nibbāna is not connected with the five khandhas.

Khandhas only had three Noble Truth, Dukkha, Samudaya, and Magga Saccas. But The Buddha said four Noble Truths were in the khandha. Sayadaw said Nibbāna was the external of the khandha, and not in the internal of the khandha. Because Nibbāna was nicca (permanent) and khandha was anicca (impermanent).]

涅槃之譬喻

1962年9月7日

在學習巴利三藏(Tipiṭaka)時,最重要的是了知「三相」(三法印)。關於二十八種色法的教導,也皆是無常之法。

將五十三種心(即五十二個心所 + 一個心王)加以總攝,仍是無常。

在四聖諦中,「苦諦」是最核心的;而「苦」的止息就是「涅槃」 (Nirodha)。「集」與「道」也都是無常、皆屬苦諦。

佛陀四十五年的教法,全都是在教導「無常」。觀無常至極處,即能發現「滅諦」。佛陀曾說,過去、現在與未來,一切諸佛皆教導「苦之生起」與「苦之止息」。

因此,不必涉獵過多的法與師,只要依此一法而行,沒有人會因此偏離正道。 我們必須轉換視角,換上一雙「聖者之眼」。父母所給的眼睛,只能用於維生 與飲食之事,並不能導向涅槃之道。若安立「聖者之眼」,則能得「聖者之 見」。

這樣的見解是純淨的,不與煩惱攪和。因此,不論聖者處於何種境遇,其心皆不動搖、無憂無苦,亦無愛著與貪染(rāga)。

當然,我們也不應否定世俗的倫常與慣例,若持「無父無母」之見,將造下極重惡業。

若你能覺知「無常」,你就得到了「聖者之眼」,因為這是「正見」 (sammādiţṭhi)。於修行中,以「正見之眼」來觀察;唯有見「無常」,方能 得「正見」。這是一種不與「第三支」(taṇhā、upādāna、kamma)相連之見。若相連,便是「邪見」、執取邪見,以及由邪見主導之行為。

這是關於證得「入流聖者」(sotāpanna)的教導;而對於一來果與不還果 (sakadāgāmin、anāgāmin)的修行者,其所面對的是「渴愛」、「執取」與 「渴愛所引導之造作」。

(尊者接著說明五道支的修行關係。)

正見與正思惟是不可分的,如眼與眼鏡一般。若無正思惟,就不能得正見。若你能覺知無常,這兩種智慧因素($pa\tilde{n}\tilde{n}a$)便具足。不可僅依賴這兩者,因為它們與其他因素相互依存。

正念能提醒你「看這裡」;正定讓你不東張西望,直視目標;若無精進推動, 則無法觸及無常的所緣。因此,若你能覺知無常,便同時具足五道支(pañca maggaṅga)。

「一心相應」(ekacitta-sampayutta)——一心當下只能與一所緣俱存。因此,你將親見自己心的「死亡」。未安立「聖者之眼」前,你不曾看見自己「死去」。心無法以尺寸衡量(pamāṇa),但它的存在對我們卻極為清晰。由「有」而至「無」的認知,即是聖者之見。

這是真正的「清淨之見」。我們可稱「正見」為「聖者之見」。在漫長的輪迴中,我們只見他人之死,卻從未見自己之死。如今,你已以「聖者之眼」見到了自己的不淨(asubha)、苦(dukkha)、無我(anattā)、無常(anicca),以及苦諦。

即使是世間的梵天,具有天眼,亦能看見地上的一根細針,但他們沒有「聖者之眼」——無法見到自己蘊體的無常。若你能剎那剎那見到自己的「死亡」,你將對它感到厭離(nibbidā);當你生起「不想再要這些死」的念頭時,一切便消失了。

若你已到達此境界,就能看見、知道有一處「無死之地」。藉著觀照,五蘊將止息。觀「無常」,即是「聖弟子之眼」;不見「死」,即是「聖者之眼」。

五蘊止息即是涅槃(khandha nirodho nibbānaṁ)——當「第二支」(即五蘊)止息,即是離死。因為「死」的根本,是「第二支」與「第三支」的連結(即由識…至業)。

此時,唯有「涅槃」與「道智」存留。「第一支、第二支、第三支與第四支」 皆已止息。它們全是「集」與「苦」的真諦。「緣起法」的整個輪轉,乃是針 對尚未修行之人所開示;對於已在修行者而言,則是整個輪轉之終結。佛陀即 是透過觀照此緣起法,成就正覺,知其始與終。

我現在來談「涅槃」。布施、持戒與禪定等修行,是導向「死」之道;唯有「觀智道法」(vipassanā magga dhamma),才能通達「不死涅槃」。由「有為法」(saṅkhata dhamma),這正是涅槃難以理解的原因——因為是以「有條件」來達至「無條件」。

(尊者以「挖掘山洞」作譬喻說明涅槃,甚為深刻。第二次世界大戰期間,戰 機轟炸人群,人們為求避難,只得在山區挖掘洞穴。)

「洞穴」過去、現在與未來皆不存在,是「挖出來」的。「挖掘」就如「觀照無常」,岩石碎片即是「五蘊」;而那空洞,即如「涅槃」,其中無有五蘊。

真正的歸依是「無為法」——即「涅槃」。無常與岩石碎片皆是「有為法」。 洞穴(涅槃)與岩石(五蘊)兩者不同。

【這個涅槃的譬喻看似簡單,實則深奧,令人容易理解涅槃之本質。】

涅槃對於有修行者而言,是實存的;而非如部分佛教徒誤以為那是「預先存在的某種心」,如「本來心」等。佛陀曾告訴羅睺羅天子(Rohitassa Devaputta),要於「這兩臂長之身」中尋找涅槃。尊者亦曾在講法中說,涅槃與五蘊無關。

五蘊只包含三聖諦——「苦、集、道」;但佛陀卻說,四聖諦皆在五蘊之中。 尊者進一步解釋:**涅槃是五蘊之外的存在**,不在五蘊之內。因為涅槃是「常」 (nicca),而五蘊是「無常」(anicca)。

涅槃的譬喻

1962年9月7日

在研習三藏(Piṭakas)時,最重要的就是要了解三法印。關於二十八種色法 (forms)的教導也是無常的。

濃縮於五十三種心法(minds)也是無常的。(此處的五十三種心法為五十二種心所加上一種識。)在四聖諦中,苦諦(dukkha sacca)是最主要的。苦的止息是涅槃(nirodha)。集諦和道諦也是無常的苦諦。

佛陀四十五年的教導也是關於無常。在無常的盡頭,將會發現滅諦。佛陀說, 過去、現在、未來,所有的佛陀都在教導苦的生起和苦的止息。

因此,不要涉獵過多的法和老師。只需遵循這條道路。沒有人會偏離這條道路。我們必須轉變為聖者的眼睛。父母給予的眼睛是用於生活和飲食的。它不包括到達涅槃。用聖者的眼睛來修正,您將獲得聖者的見解。

這種見解是純淨的,不與煩惱(kilesa)混合。因此,聖者處於任何情況下,他們的心都不會動搖,從不憂慮,從不帶有愛戀,並從離欲(raga,貪欲、執著)中解脫。我們也不應排斥世俗的習俗。以沒有父母的見解,將不會造作重大的惡業。

如果您認知無常,您將獲得聖者的眼睛,因為它是正見。在修行中,用正見的 眼睛來看。唯有看到無常,才能達到正見。這是不與第三部分連接的見解。如 果與第三部分連接,它將變成邪見,伴隨邪見的執著,以及受邪見支配的行為。

這是成為須陀洹的教導。對於一來果(sakadāgāmin)和不還果(anāgāmin), 要處理的過程是渴愛,以及伴隨渴愛所做的執著和行為。

(尊者繼續解釋五道支,以及它們如何在修行中連接。)正見和正思維無法分開。它們就像眼睛和眼鏡。沒有正思維,就無法獲得正見。如果您認知無常,請包含這兩個智慧的因素。您無法僅憑它們中的兩個來認知。

正念提醒您看這裡。定(samādhi)不讓您的頭四處移動,而是讓您的眼睛直視對象。如果精進(viriya)不將其推向無常的對象,它就無法到達那裡。因此,如果您在認知無常,您將獲得五道支。

一心相應(Ekacitta sampayutta)——心只能與一個事物同在。因此,您看到了自己心的死亡。在沒有用聖者的眼睛修正之前,您沒有看到自己的死亡。心無法用尺寸(pamāṇa)來顯示。可以感受到它的存在對我們來說是清晰的。知道從存在到不存在,是聖者的見解。

這是純淨的見解。您可以說正見是聖者的見解。在整個輪迴中,您只看到了他人的死亡,但從未經歷過自己的死亡。現在,您用聖者的眼睛看到了自己的不淨(asubha)、苦、無我、無常和苦諦。

世俗的梵天神以他們的神眼可以看到地球上的一根小針。但他們沒有聖者的眼睛,看不到自己無常的五蘊。如果您時刻看到自己的死亡,您將對它感到厭離。在不想要這些死亡的時候,它們全部消失。

如果您到達這一點,請看並知道有一個沒有死亡的地方。透過觀照,五蘊消失。看到無常是聖者弟子的眼睛。看不到死亡是聖者的眼睛。

沒有五蘊存在,即是「蘊滅即涅槃」(khandha nirodho nibbānaṁ)——五蘊的止息即是涅槃。第二部分(即五蘊)不存在。這些是死亡的元素。看不到死亡的原因是第二部分連接第三部分(即從識···到···業)的止息。

只剩下涅槃和道智(magga ñāṇa)。第一、第二、第三和第四部分都止息了。它們都是集諦和苦諦。對於沒有修行的人,緣起(D.A.)的整個循環過程都是在教導他們。對於修行的人,緣起的整個循環過程都結束了。在觀照緣起過程並成為佛陀之後,他知道了它的開始和結束。

我將談論涅槃。布施、持戒和止禪修行是為了死亡。透過內觀道法,獲得不死的涅槃。透過有為法(saṅkhata dhammas,有條件的現象),您將獲得無為法(asaṅkhata dhamma,無條件的現象)。這就是為什麼涅槃難以理解的原因,因為用有條件來獲得無條件。

(尊者用挖洞穴的譬喻來解釋涅槃。這非常深刻。在第二次世界大戰期間,噴 射戰鬥機來轟炸人們。因此,他們不得不在山區挖洞穴以求安全。)洞穴在過去、現在和未來都不存在。

它是透過挖掘而出現的。挖掘就像看到無常。岩石碎片就像五蘊。空洞的洞穴就像涅槃,沒有五蘊。

真正的皈依是無為的——asaṅkhata。無常和岩石碎片是有為的——saṅkhata。空洞的洞穴(涅槃)和岩石碎片(五蘊)是不同的。

[這個涅槃的譬喻看起來非常簡單,但卻深刻且容易理解涅槃的本質。

涅槃確實為修行的人而存在。它不像一些佛教徒所認為的那樣,事先存在。 (例如,原始的心等等。)佛陀告訴羅醯多娑天子(Rohitassa Devaputta)在兩 臂長的身軀中尋找涅槃。在他的講述中,尊者說涅槃與五蘊無關。

五蘊只有三聖諦,苦、集、道諦。但佛陀說四聖諦都在五蘊之中。尊者說涅槃是五蘊的外部,而不是五蘊的內部。因為涅槃是常(nicca),而五蘊是無常(anicca)。]

Contemplation on Anatta

16th September 1962

There are five khandhas. Some people contemplate on forms and discern anicca. Some contemplate on minds and some on contact (phassa) and discern impermanence. Some contemplate on feelings and at last whatever you are contemplating, all phenomena are not-self—sabbe dhammā anattā.

It doesn't follow the desire of a person or a being. Not according to our own interests and not follow the character of a person is anatta. It happens according to its own nature. For example, an itching sensation arises. It arises without the desire of a person or a being.

After arising, it disappears. In disappearing, also not follow the desire of a being. So if feeling arises, contemplate it as anatta. The body contacts with the air from the electric fan and pleasant feeling arises. And contemplate it as anatta. It doesn't follow anyone's desire. It arises by the contact of sense object and sense door. (Continued on the neutral feelings from the four sense doors of seeing, hearing, smelling, tasting).

Contemplate them also as anatta (continued on the mental feelings of somanassa, domanassa, and upekkhā). Also contemplate them as anatta. Arising is anatta and disappearing is anatta. Not following the desire of a person or a being. Not following the character of a person. Note these three points as anatta.

There was another kind of anatta taught by the Buddha. For example, conditions by viññāṇaṁ and nāma-rūpaṁ arise. With the cessation of viññāṇaṁ and nāma-rūpaṁ also cease. This is the cause anatta and the result also anatta. Both were the same nature. The first one is showing with person or being. The second one is showing dhamma nature, or related with dhamma. This came from the Saṃyutta Nikāya.

Another way is with contact (phassa) and feeling arises. With the cessation of contact, feeling ceases. Only cause and effect exist, and not including a person or a

being. Atta (self) and attaniya (belonging to self) are falling away. This was from the Chachakka Sutta—the Six Sextets Discourse, Majjhima Nikāya (MN.148/(6) Chachakkasuttam).

This kind of anatta was teaching by the Buddha not letting the self come in. If you appreciate this kind of anatta, you'll free from sassata and uccheda (eternalism and annihilationism). In the Aṅguttara Nikāya, the Buddha said that without clearing away sassata uccheda views and practiced, even couldn't get the saccanulomika ñāṇa—knowledge in accordance with truth.

So no need to mention about Path and Fruition Knowledge. If listening to dhamma talks, all of them get merits. But there are also dhammas with the realization of Nibbāna and also without it. It will get Nibbāna only with dhammas dispelling wrong views. Why after dispelling wrong views and with the practice will see Nibbāna?

(Sayadaw made this emphasis by pointing to the suttas, for example, in the cases of Ven. Channa, Ven. Yamaka, Ven. Anurādha, etc.)

The dhammas you contemplate are anatta (objects of contemplation). Also Nibbāna is anatta. It will come to the ending only with the knowing of the saṅkhāra anatta and their disenchantment and not wanting of them. And then you'll get the unconditioned anatta (Nibbāna).

At the ending of sankhāra anatta, asankhata anatta exists. Anatta benefits anatta. You are hearing strange words. Don't take it as easy to hear about them. First, the Buddha taught two views of anatta: "without a person / a being" and "cause / effect" anattas.

Now, there are two kinds of anatta with the practice. Sabbe dhamma anatta—All dhammas are anatta. Contemplate to see this (i.e., impermanence) and to become disenchantment of it and following to the ending.

You will see the ending of them after seeing impermanence, dukkha, anatta. At the end of saṅkhata anatta, you will see asaṅkhata anatta. This is the practicing process of anatta. With the big knowledge, it becomes clearer.

無我觀

1962年9月16日

有五蘊。有些人觀色蘊,並認知無常。有些人觀心蘊,有些人觀觸 (phassa),並認知無常。有些人觀受蘊,最後,無論您觀照什麼,所有現象 都是無我——sabbe dhammā anattā。

它不遵循人或眾生的欲望。不符合我們自身的利益,也不遵循人的性格,這就是無我。它根據自身的本性發生。例如,瘙癢感生起。它在沒有人或眾生的欲望下生起。

生起後,它便消失。在消失時,也不遵循眾生的欲望。因此,如果感受生起, 請將其觀照為無我。身體接觸電風扇的空氣,愉悅的感受生起。並將其觀照為 無我。它不遵循任何人的欲望。它由根塵接觸而生起。(繼續講述來自眼、耳、 鼻、舌四根的中性感受。)

也將它們觀照為無我(繼續講述心靈的感受,樂受、苦受和捨受)。也將它們觀照為無我。生起是無我,消失也是無我。不遵循人或眾生的欲望。不遵循人的性格。將這三點記為無我。

佛陀還教導了另一種無我。例如,識(viññāṇam)和名色(nāma-rūpam)的條件而生起。隨著識和名色的止息,它們也止息。這是因無我,結果也是無我。兩者都是相同的本性。第一種是顯示人或眾生。第二種是顯示法的本性,或與法相關。這來自《相應部》(Saṃyutta Nikāya)。

另一種方式是,透過觸(phassa),感受生起。隨著觸的止息,感受也止息。 只有因果存在,不包括人或眾生。我(atta)和我所(attaniya)都消失了。這來自《六六經》——六六論述,《中部尼迦耶》(MN.148/(6) Chachakkasuttam)。 佛陀教導這種無我,是不讓人我介入。如果您欣賞這種無我,您將從常見(sassata)和斷見(uccheda)中解脫。《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)中,佛陀說,如果沒有清除常見斷見,即使修行,也無法獲得隨順諦智(saccanulomika ñāṇa)——與真理相符的知識。

因此,更不用說道智和果智了。如果聽聞佛法開示,所有人都能獲得功德。但也有可以證得涅槃的法,以及不能證得涅槃的法。只有能驅除邪見的法,才能證得涅槃。為什麼在驅除邪見並修行之後,才能見到涅槃?

(尊者透過指出經文來強調這一點,例如,在闡陀尊者(Ven. Channa)、閻摩迦尊者(Ven. Yamaka)、阿那律陀尊者(Ven. Anurādha)等人的案例中。)

您觀照的法是無我(觀照的對象)。涅槃也是無我。唯有了解有為無我 (saṅkhāra anatta)及其厭離和不欲,才會到達終點。然後您將獲得無為無我 (涅槃)。

在有為無我的終點,無為無我存在。無我利益無我。您聽到陌生的詞語。不要輕易地認為它們很容易聽到。首先,佛陀教導了兩種無我的見解:「沒有人/眾生」和「因/果」的無我。

現在,有兩種透過修行而得的無我。「一切法無我」(Sabbe dhamma anatta)。觀照以看到這一點(即,無常),並對其感到厭離,並走向終點。

在看到無常、苦、無我之後,您將看到它們的終點。在有為無我的終點,您將看到無為無我。這是無我的修行過程。有了廣大的知識,它會變得更清晰。

無我觀

1962年9月16日

有五蘊。有些人觀色蘊,並認知無常。有些人觀心蘊,有些人觀觸 (phassa),並認知無常。有些人觀受蘊,最後,無論您觀照什麼,所有現象 都是無我——sabbe dhammā anattā。

它不遵循人或眾生的欲望。不符合我們自身的利益,也不遵循人的性格,這就是無我。它根據自身的本性發生。例如,瘙癢感生起。它在沒有人或眾生的欲望下生起。

生起後,它便消失。在消失時,也不遵循眾生的欲望。因此,如果感受生起, 請將其觀照為無我。身體接觸電風扇的空氣,愉悅的感受生起。並將其觀照為 無我。它不遵循任何人的欲望。它由根塵接觸而生起。(繼續講述來自眼、耳、 鼻、舌四根的中性感受。)

也將它們觀照為無我(繼續講述心靈的感受,樂受、苦受和捨受)。也將它們觀照為無我。生起是無我,消失也是無我。不遵循人或眾生的欲望。不遵循人的性格。將這三點記為無我。

佛陀還教導了另一種無我。例如,識(viññāṇaṁ)和名色(nāma-rūpaṁ)的條件而生起。隨著識和名色的止息,它們也止息。這是因無我,結果也是無我。兩者都是相同的本性。第一種是顯示人或眾生。第二種是顯示法的本性,或與法相關。這來自《相應部》(Saṃyutta Nikāya)。

另一種方式是,透過觸(phassa),感受生起。隨著觸的止息,感受也止息。 只有因果存在,不包括人或眾生。我(atta)和我所(attaniya)都消失了。這來自《六六經》——六六論述,《中部尼迦耶》(MN.148/(6) Chachakkasuttam)。

佛陀教導這種無我,是不讓人我介入。如果您欣賞這種無我,您將從常見(sassata)和斷見(uccheda)中解脫。《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)中,佛陀說,如果沒有清除常見斷見,即使修行,也無法獲得隨順諦智(saccanulomika ñāna)——與真理相符的知識。

因此,更不用說道智和果智了。如果聽聞佛法開示,所有人都能獲得功德。但也有可以證得涅槃的法,以及不能證得涅槃的法。只有能驅除邪見的法,才能證得涅槃。為什麼在驅除邪見並修行之後,才能見到涅槃?

(尊者透過指出經文來強調這一點,例如,在闡陀尊者(Ven. Channa)、閻摩迦尊者(Ven. Yamaka)、阿那律陀尊者(Ven. Anurādha)等人的案例中。)

您觀照的法是無我(觀照的對象)。涅槃也是無我。唯有了解有為無我 (saṅkhāra anatta)及其厭離和不欲,才會到達終點。然後您將獲得無為無我 (涅槃)。

在有為無我的終點,無為無我存在。無我利益無我。您聽到陌生的詞語。不要輕易地認為它們很容易聽到。首先,佛陀教導了兩種無我的見解:「沒有人/眾生」和「因/果」的無我。

現在,有兩種透過修行而得的無我。「一切法無我」(Sabbe dhamma anatta)。觀照以看到這一點(即,無常),並對其感到厭離,並走向終點。在看到無常、苦、無我之後,您將看到它們的終點。在有為無我的終點,您將看到無為無我。這是無我的修行過程。有了廣大的知識,它會變得更清晰。

Cessation of the Taints

19th September 1962

The ending of the taints—āsava is the ending of its causes. If you ask the result, it's the realization of Nibbāna. There are two kinds of realization (e.g., an arahant still alive and after passing away). In the Saṃyutta Nikāya, the Buddha taught how to end āsava.

These kilesa dhammas are floating and sinking down living beings from the highest plane—the realm of neither perception nor non-perception—nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatanabhūmi to the lowest plane—the Great Hell is called taints—āsava.

Condense them and these are greed, hatred, and delusion—lobha, dosa, and moha dhammas. Condense the four and become 2, lobha and moha dhammas. Taints of sensuality (kāmāsava) and taints of becoming (bhavāsava) are greed (lobha).

Taints of wrong views (diṭṭhāsava) and taints of ignorance (avijjāsava) are delusion (moha). Human and celestial planes are kāmāsava. The fine material-sphere planes (rūpāvacarabhūmi) and immaterial-sphere planes (arūpāvacarabhūmi) are bhavāsava, and the four woeful planes (apāyabhūmi) are diṭṭhāsava.

Floating and sinking up and down, all the living beings in different realms is avijjāsava. If there are taints, their ending also exists. What kinds of person end āsava? Jhānato passato āsavakhayam vaddami—the person with contemplation sees taints come to an end.

If you can discern with contemplation, taints will come to an end. Separate the five khandhas into four satipaṭṭhāna and contemplate one of them can fulfill the satipaṭṭhāna practice. If you know whatever phenomenon is arising and has the two processes of rise and fall, taints will end.

For example, greed arises and then vanishes. All the other dhammas are also the same. So don't name it as greed, etc., instead take it as arising and vanishing

dhamma. All are arising and vanishing phenomena. If you see these ignorance becomes knowledge (avijj $\bar{a} \rightarrow vijj\bar{a}$).

Taṇhā (craving) not arises and kāmāsava, bhavāsava, and diṭṭhāsava cease. Craving, clinging, and action cease without arising. Therefore, there are two kinds of cessation: cessation by discerning and without arising. The four āsavas cease by discerning impermanence. You all are praying for the ending of āsavas.

But with no practice and only having desires. The Buddha taught the ending by contemplation. And then he said that the ending of dukkha—peaceful Nibbāna couldn't be realized with relaxed effort but with only full effort.

Therefore, you have to make full effort. The goal of knowledge must work with knowledge. That's only realized Nibbāna. With only dāna, sīla, and samādhi can't get it. These are only support for it.

(Sayadaw gave the simile of a hen and some eggs from the sutta to explain on the realization of Nibbāna with practice and not by prayers. He told the duties of the hen). For this point, the Buddha gave the simile of a hen and eggs. With the contemplation of impermanence, kilesa becomes thinner.

It was like the hen sat on the eggs very often and dried up the liquid of kilesa inside it. And also the avijjā shells were becoming thinner. The darkness of avijjā disappears and the light of vijjā appears. Practice with the three jobs of anicca, dukkha and anatta, contemplate it over and over, and the shell of ignorance will thin out.

And then taṇhā liquid will dry out. And will see the Nibbāna light element. These are the result of the contemplation of impermanence. Except this job and there is no other refuge. Shell of ignorance and taṇhā liquid cover up the knowledge (ñāṇa).

Therefore, knowledge can't sharp. Without the contemplation, every day taṇhā liquid cover up thicker and thicker. (If the mind has smell like the body, it may be very unbearable). With the contemplation, it becomes vijjā udapādi—knowledge arises.

Human beings are every day covered up with ignorance and craving, and their minds are over-polluted. (Medias and environmental problems support this point). Therefore, not become aloko udapādi—light can't arise. The function of knowledge is bhāvetabba—continuous contemplation and development.

It happens only by development, not by praying or prayers. (Later Buddhists do a lot of prayers to get outside powers). Even wanting to be born in the brahma worlds has to practice. So no need to mention about Nibbāna with prayers. You can ask how long have to contemplate.

With example, wise people can know it. The Buddha gave the simile of an adze. Your duties are not separating from impermanence with the knowledge. (i.e., anicca/magga) Magga is vijjā. Therefore, knowledge is doing the job of trimming out ignorance. Here nothing to do with the perfection (pāramī).

If you use the handle of an adze to strike things a lot, the handle will be eroded. Seeing impermanence a lot, avijjā and taṇhā become thinner and āsava will come to an end. With the less contemplation, kilesa come in between the practice. And then avijjā and taṇhā are becoming thicker.

漏盡之道

1962年9月19日

「漏」(āsava)的止息,就是其因的止息。若你問其結果是什麼?那就是證得 涅槃(Nibbāna)。涅槃的證得有兩種情形:一是尚在世間的阿羅漢,二是阿羅 漢入滅之後。佛陀於《相應部》中詳細教導了「如何斷漏」。

這些「煩惱法」(kilesa dhammas)讓眾生在生死輪迴中不斷浮沉,上至「非想非非想處天」(nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatana-bhūmi),下至「大地獄」,其名皆曰「漏」(āsava)。

將之統攝,可分為貪、瞋、癡三類(lobha, dosa, moha);再簡化,可歸為二: 貪與癡。 欲漏(kāmāsava)與有漏(bhavāsava)屬於「貪」; 見漏(diṭṭhāsava)與無明漏(avijjāsava)屬於「癡」。

人間與天界屬於「欲漏」所涉;色界與無色界則屬「有漏」;四惡趣 (*apāyabhūmi*)則歸於「見漏」。而眾生在六道中上下流轉沉浮,即是「無明 漏」之作為。

既有「漏」,就必有其「止息」。什麼樣的人能斷盡諸漏?佛陀說:**Jhānato** passato āsavakkhayam vadāmi——我說:如實觀照者能斷盡漏。

若你以觀照而得如實知見,「漏」便得止息。將五蘊分別安立於四念處中,選一處加以觀照,即能完成四念處修行。若你知道:凡生起之法皆具「生與滅」兩個階段,那麼漏將自然止息。

例如:貪心生起,之後滅去。其他諸法亦復如是。因此,勿將其執取為「這是貪心」,而應將其認知為一種「生滅現象」。一切皆是生滅法。若你見此,則無明轉為明($avijj\bar{a} \rightarrow vijj\bar{a}$)。

渴愛(taṇhā)不再生起,則欲漏、有漏、見漏便得止息。當「渴愛、執取、造作」不再生起時,即是另一種止息。

因此,止息可分為兩種:

- 1. 由觀照而止息;
- 2. 不再生起之止息。

四種「漏」,皆可因觀照無常而止息。你們都在祈求「漏盡」,但若無修行,僅以願望為依,終不可得。佛陀是以觀法來教導「漏盡」之道。祂亦說:「苦之止息——寂靜之涅槃,非以懈怠可得,唯有全力精勤方能達成。」

因此,必須全力以赴。以「智慧」為目標者,必須以「智慧」來實踐。唯此方能證得涅槃。單靠佈施(dāna)、持戒(sīla)、定力(samādhi),是無法證涅槃的,這些僅為助緣。

(尊者接著引用經中的「母雞孵蛋譬喻」,說明涅槃是靠修行觀照而得,並非 靠祈願可得。)

佛陀以母雞與雞蛋為譬喻,說明觀無常如何漸斷煩惱。如母雞不斷伏在蛋上, 蛋內的「渴愛液體」逐漸乾涸;「無明之殼」也逐漸變薄。無明的黑暗消退, 「明」之光顯現。 若能以「無常、苦、無我」三法勤加觀照,則無明之殼日漸薄弱,渴愛之液漸漸乾枯。最終,你將親見「涅槃之光」。

除了此道,別無他歸。因「無明之殼」與「渴愛之液」覆蓋住智慧(ñāṇa),令智慧無法銳利。若不觀照,每日「渴愛液體」只會愈積愈厚。(若心也有氣味,恐怕會令人難以忍受。)

唯有觀照,才會生起「明現」(vijjā udapādi)——智慧之現起。如今眾生日日被無明與渴愛所覆,其心極為污染。(現今的媒體與環境惡化也佐證此點。)

因此,未能成就「光現」(aloko udapādi)。智慧的功能在於「開發與增長」(bhāvetabba)——須不斷修習與觀照,非憑祈願而得。(當今佛教徒多以祈願為重,寄望外在神力。)

即使想往生梵天界,尚需修行,更遑論涅槃,豈是祈願可得?或問:需觀照多久?

佛陀舉出「斧柄譬喻」:智慧者自能理解。你們的本分是:不離「無常」與 「智慧」之觀照。(即「無常」=「道」;「道」=「智」。)道即是「明」, 智慧的功能就是不斷削減無明。

此處與「波羅蜜(pāramī)」無關。

如斧柄反覆使用,其柄自然磨損;同理,若你反覆觀無常,無明與渴愛將日漸減薄,「諸漏」亦將止息。反之,若觀照薄弱,煩惱就會乘虛而入,無明與渴愛又再度增厚。

漏盡

1962年9月19日

漏(āsava)的止息就是其原因的止息。如果您問結果,那就是涅槃的證悟。證悟有兩種(例如,阿羅漢在世時和涅槃後)。在《相應部》(Saṃyutta Nikāya)中,佛陀教導了如何止息漏。

這些煩惱法(kilesa dhammas)在最高境界——非想非非想處地(nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatanabhūmi)到最低境界——大地獄之間,令眾生漂浮和沉淪,這被稱為漏。

濃縮它們,就是貪、瞋、癡——lobha、dosa、moha 法。濃縮四種,變成兩種, 貪和癡法。欲漏(kāmāsava)和有漏(bhavāsava)是貪(lobha)。

見漏(diṭṭhāsava)和無明漏(avijjāsava)是癡(moha)。人天界是欲漏。色界(rūpāvacarabhūmi)和無色界(arūpāvacarabhūmi)是有漏,四惡趣(apāyabhūmi)是見漏。

在不同境界中,令所有眾生上下漂浮和沉淪的是無明漏。如果有漏,它們的止息也存在。什麼樣的人止息漏?jhānato passato āsavakhayam vaddami——以觀照看到漏止息的人。

如果您能以觀照認知,漏將止息。將五蘊分成四念處,觀照其中之一,就能圓滿念處的修行。如果您知道任何生起的現象都有生滅的兩個過程,漏將止息。

例如,貪生起,然後消失。所有其他法也是如此。因此,不要將其命名為貪等,而是將其視為生滅法。一切都是生滅現象。如果您看到這些,無明就會變成知識(avijjā → vijjā)。

渴愛(taṇhā)不生起,欲漏、有漏和見漏止息。渴愛、取和業在沒有生起的情况下止息。因此,有兩種止息:透過認知的止息和沒有生起的止息。四漏透過認知無常而止息。你們都在祈求漏的止息。

但沒有修行,只有欲望。佛陀教導透過觀照來止息。然後他說,苦的止息—— 寂靜的涅槃,無法透過鬆懈的努力來實現,只能透過全力以赴來實現。

因此,您必須全力以赴。知識的目標必須與知識一起運作。只有這樣才能證悟涅槃。僅憑布施、持戒和定無法獲得它。這些只是它的支持。

(尊者用經中的母雞和雞蛋的譬喻,來解釋透過修行而非祈禱證悟涅槃。他講述了母雞的職責。)對於這一點,佛陀給出了母雞和雞蛋的譬喻。透過觀照無常,煩惱變得稀薄。

就像母雞經常坐在雞蛋上,並使其中的煩惱液體變乾一樣。並且無明的外殼也變得稀薄。無明的黑暗消失,知識的光明出現。以無常、苦、無我的三項工作修行,一遍又一遍地觀照它,無明的外殼就會變薄。

然後,渴愛的液體就會變乾。並將看到涅槃的光明元素。這些是觀照無常的結果。除了這項工作,沒有其他皈依處。無明的外殼和渴愛的液體掩蓋了知識 (ñāṇa)。 因此,知識無法變得敏銳。沒有觀照,每天渴愛的液體都會變得越來越厚。 (如果心像身體一樣有氣味,那可能會非常難以忍受)。透過觀照,它變成 vijjā udapādi——知識生起。

人類每天都被無明和渴愛所掩蓋,他們的心靈受到過度污染。(媒體和環境問題支持這一點)。因此,無法變成 aloko udapādi——光明無法生起。知識的功能是 bhāvetabba——持續的觀照和發展。

它只能透過發展來實現,而不是透過祈禱或祈求。(後來的佛教徒進行大量祈禱以獲得外在力量)。即使想要生於梵天世界,也必須修行。因此,更不用說透過祈禱獲得涅槃了。您可以問要觀照多久。

舉例來說,智者可以知道它。佛陀給出了斧頭的譬喻。您的職責是用知識不離開無常。(即,無常/道)道是智慧。因此,知識正在進行修剪無明的工作。這裡與波羅蜜(pāramī)無關。

如果您用斧頭柄多次敲擊物體,柄就會被磨損。多次看到無常,無明和渴愛就會變薄,漏就會止息。觀照較少,煩惱就會進入修行之間。然後無明和渴愛就會變得更厚。

Are You Worshipping Wrong Views?

20th September 1962

Before in the past lives, you all had done dāna, sīla, and samatha practices. Why can't you still realize Nibbāna until now? You have to know that there's something still obstructing you. The self-view of my dāna, my sīla, and my samatha are mixing up with you. These are the hindrances. You might meet one of the Buddhas in your past lives.

(Before many Buddhas had arisen in the world as many as the numbers of sand grains in the Ganges River. The Buddha also mentioned that one couldn't find the beginning of a living being because samsāra was so long.)

Even you met the Buddha, "me-and-mine" self-view hindered you for the realization of Dhamma. Outside the sāsana (i.e., other teachings; sāsana refers to the Buddha's Teachings) it governs living beings all the time. Even without dispelling atta diṭṭhi, doing dāna, sīla, and samatha, and encountering the teaching, it hinders the realization of Nibbāna.

Therefore, you are suffered from the khandha dukkha and the dukkha of burnt with kilesa heat. If you have me and you have mine, they forbid the ending of khandha and taṇhā. It doesn't forbid other things. It prefers you to be in the sea of dukkha. It doesn't prefer you to be free from dukkha. Quite an evil dhamma it is!

But the difficulty is you all are worshipping him. Not understand the D. A. of the khandha that this wrong view arises. It was also atta diṭṭhi that we had missed the Buddha because at that time, we were in the woeful planes. It was also we had missed the Dhamma because it was resisted by diṭṭhi within our hearts.

There were two chances of missing; without and with encountering the Dhamma. The power of atta ditthi is quite extensive, and reaching the whole 31 realms of existences. Nothing is possible without it. It's like all living beings are bound with the ropes of ditthi and floating down the river of taṇhā water.

If the diṭṭhi ropes are never cut off or falling apart, one can't free from the danger of taṇhā water. Diṭṭhi was so evil that the Buddha told us to deal it before than when you were hit with a spear or your head was on fire.

In the Abyākatasaṃyutta, Vaccha Brahman asked the Buddha; "Does atta exist?" The Buddha not answered. He asked again; "Does it not exist?" The Buddha again not answered. So Ven. Ānanda asked the Buddha why he didn't answer them. The Buddha replied to him that if he answered it did exist; one would take it as eternalism. (SN.44.8. Vacchagottasuttaṃ)

If he answered it didn't exist; one would take it as annihilationism. Therefore, the Buddha not answered it. And now you'll understand how difficult to dispel diṭṭhi. Listen with the big ears only have the value (it means ñāṇa ears).

Another point was if the Buddha answered atta existed, it was the opposite of sabbe dhammā anattā—all dhammas were not-self. If answered not existed, he had already had the view of atta and become confusion. (This point is quite true, even to Buddhists who believe in self or soul is not easy to accept anatta doctrine).

Except the discerning of impermanence, there is no other dhamma can destroy diṭṭhi. Insight knowledge (vipassanā magga) is like digging out the root of a tree and Path Knowledge cutting off the root after it exposes. The first magga doesn't cut off lobba and dosa. It cut off diṭṭhi alone.

Only by abandoning it, that can be free from the four woeful planes of existence. So you have to know that living beings arriving there are the cause of ditthi. It sends beings to blissful planes of existence (sugati) and forbid Nibbāna.

If you see the arising phenomenon, free from uccheda view. If seeing the vanishing, free from sassata view. Practice for seeing impermanence means to kill ditthi. Practice to see its disenchantment means to disenchant ditthi. Practice to see its ending is cut off the root of ditthi.

你是否在禮拜邪見?

1962年9月20日

在過去無數生中,你們曾經修過布施(dāna)、持戒(sīla)、止禪(samatha)等功德。那為何直到現在仍未證得涅槃?你必須明白,仍有某些障礙存在。

那就是:「我的布施、我的持戒、我的禪修」這類「我見」(atta-diţţhi)混雜 其間。這些即是障礙,亦即「蓋障」。或許你在過去世曾遇見某位佛陀。

(過去世出現的佛陀,其數量如恆河沙般無量。佛陀也曾說,因為輪迴之久遠,無法尋得眾生的起點。)

即使你曾遇佛,但「我與我所」之見阻礙你證得佛法。佛法之外(即*外道*之法),「我見」始終統攝眾生。即使已接觸到佛法,若未斷除「我見」,則布施、持戒與止禪仍會成為障礙,阻礙涅槃之證得。

因此,你仍在承受「蘊苦」,以及被煩惱之火焚燒的苦。只要「我」與「我 所」仍存在,就會妨礙「五蘊」與「渴愛」的止息——它不妨礙其他事情,只 妨礙你解脫出苦海。這真是極為惡毒的法!

然而困難的是:你們還在「禮拜」它!

正因不了解「五蘊的緣起」而生起此錯見。也正是因為「我見」,我們在過去錯失了遇佛的機會——因為當時我們墮入了惡趣。又因「我見」仍藏在心中, 使我們錯失了佛法。

這錯失有兩種情況:一是未曾遇法;二是遇法而未證。這說明「我見」的力量 極其強大,能伸展到整個三十一界。若未破除它,便什麼也辦不到。眾生就像 被「見之繩索」綁住,漂浮在「渴愛之水」的激流中。

只要這「見之繩索」不被割斷或崩解,便無法從「渴愛之水」的危險中解脫出來。「我見」是如此可怕,佛陀甚至說:「當斷除它,優先於頭上著火或被矛刺身。」

在《無記相應》(Abyākata-saṃyutta)中,婆羅門婆蹉(Vaccha)問佛陀:「是否有一個『我』(atta)?」佛陀沈默不答。又問:「是否沒有一個『我』?」佛陀依然不答。

尊者阿難便請問佛陀為何不回答。佛陀說:「若我說『有我』,世人將執取為『常見』(sassata);若我說『無我』,世人將墮入『斷見』(uccheda)。」因此,佛陀選擇不答。(參:相應部SN 44.8《婆蹉經》)

現在你就會明白,破除「我見」有多麼困難。唯有以「智慧之耳」聽聞(即 ñāṇa 耳),才能真正理解。

佛陀若說「有我」,就違背了「一切法皆無我」(sabbe dhammā anattā)的教義;若說「無我」,則會讓人誤認佛陀也持某種「有我」的觀念,進而造成混亂。(這一點即便對部分佛教徒而言也是難以接受的——他們仍信仰某種「靈魂」或「自我」。)

除了觀「無常」之外,沒有任何法能破「我見」。

觀智(vipassanā magga)如同挖出樹根,道智(magga ñāṇa)則是將之斷除。 初道智不斷除貪與瞋,只是斷除「我見」。

唯有斷除「我見」,方可脫離四惡趣。你應該知道,眾生墮入惡趣的根本原因,即是「我見」。它既能引導眾生升天(sugati),卻同時阻止他們證入涅槃。

若你觀「生起」之法,即能遠離「斷見」(uccheda);若你觀「滅去」之法,即能遠離「常見」(sassata)。修行觀無常,就是為了「殺我見」;修行觀厭離,就是為了「厭我見」;修行觀止息,就是為了「斷我見之根」。

您是否在崇拜錯誤的見解?

1962年9月20日

在過去的生命中,你們都做過布施、持戒和止禪修行。為什麼直到現在還無法 證悟涅槃?你們必須知道,還有一些東西在阻礙你們。我的布施、我的持戒和 我的止禪的自我觀念正在與你們混合。這些是障礙。你們可能在前世遇到了佛 陀。

(過去,許多佛陀在世間出現,就像恆河中的沙粒一樣多。佛陀也提到,人們 無法找到眾生的開始,因為輪迴太長了。)

即使你們遇到了佛陀,「我與我所」的自我觀念也阻礙了你們對法的證悟。在佛陀的教法(sāsana,指佛陀的教導)之外,它始終支配著眾生。即使沒有驅

除我見(atta diṭṭhi),做布施、持戒和止禪,並遇到教導,它也會阻礙涅槃的 證悟。

因此,你們正在遭受五蘊之苦和被煩惱之熱燃燒的痛苦。如果你們有我和我所, 它們會阻止五蘊和渴愛的終止。它不會阻止其他事情。它寧願你們處於苦海之 中。它不希望你們從苦中解脫。多麼邪惡的法啊!

但困難的是,你們都在崇拜它。不理解五蘊的緣起,這種錯誤的見解才會生起。 我們錯過佛陀,也是因為當時我們處於惡趣之中。我們錯過佛法,也是因為我們內心被邪見所抵抗。

錯過有兩種機會:沒有遇到佛法和遇到佛法。我見的力量非常廣泛,遍及三十一有。沒有它,一切皆不可能。就像所有眾生都被邪見的繩索束縛,並順著渴愛的河流漂流一樣。

如果邪見的繩索永遠不會被切斷或斷裂,人們就無法從渴愛的危險中解脫。邪見是如此邪惡,以至於佛陀告訴我們,在被矛刺傷或頭部著火之前,就要處理它。

在《無記相應》(Abyākatasaṃyutta)中,婆蹉婆羅門問佛陀:「我存在嗎?」佛陀沒有回答。他再次問:「它不存在嗎?」佛陀再次沒有回答。因此,阿難尊者問佛陀為什麼不回答他們。佛陀回答他說,如果他回答它存在,人們會將其視為常見。(SN.44.8. Vacchagottasuttaṃ)

如果他回答它不存在,人們會將其視為斷見。因此,佛陀沒有回答。現在你們會明白驅除邪見有多麼困難。只有用大耳朵聽才有價值(意味著智耳)。

另一點是,如果佛陀回答我存在,那就與「一切法無我」(sabbe dhammā anattā)相反。如果回答不存在,他已經有了我的觀點並變得困惑。(這一點非常真實,即使對於相信自我或靈魂的佛教徒來說,接受無我教義也不容易。)

除了認知無常之外,沒有其他法可以摧毀邪見。內觀道(vipassanā magga)就像挖出樹根,道智在樹根暴露後將其切斷。第一個道不會切斷貪和瞋。它只切斷邪見。

只有捨棄它,才能從四惡趣中解脫。因此,你們必須知道,眾生到達那裡的原因是邪見。它將眾生送到善趣,並阻止涅槃。

如果您看到生起的現象,就能從斷見中解脫。如果您看到消失的現象,就能從常見中解脫。修行看到無常意味著殺死邪見。修行看到它的厭離意味著厭離邪見。修行看到它的終止,就是切斷邪見的根。

Body and Mental Pains

22nd September 1962

The five khandhas are always changing. The nature of form (rūpa) is changing. The nature of earth elements (paṭhavīdhātu) is hardness. Disbanding its nature is changing. If disbands, its hardness nature is changing.

If the heat element is dissipating, also change. In feeling aggregate, pleasant feeling arises and passes away. Perception, mental formation and mind, all are arising and passing away by changing.

Therefore, there is nothing to say about that the khandha is always healthy and stable. We have to remember that all the five khandhas fall apart because of its unhealthy nature. With the insight knowledge, contemplate whatever arising as falling apart because of its unhealthy nature.

So it's unhealthy at any time. The ariyas know that if separate from the khandha it will be healthy (The power of ignorance and delusion are quite amazing. The views of ariyas and worldlings never meet). So they prefer not to have the khandhas. That is the appreciation of Nibbāna. They are happy to lay down the khandhas.

(Some Buddhists take this as selfishness. This is misinterpreting the Dhamma with their own teachings. Only people having clinging are not free from selfishness and defilements. Coming and going are only possible with clinging. It's like the root of a tree never grows back again after cutting off. This is the law of nature. Sabbe dhamma anatta).

But for the worldlings, they desire for the next burdened khandhas. If you look at it with the vipassanā eyes, will find out that it's never healthy. It appears in the mind as vaṭṭa khandha or burdened khandha. If you don't have these kinds of eyes, you will not prefer to lay down the khandha.

If you have this eye, you don't want this present khandha, and don't desire for the future khandha. Therefore, you have to practice hard in vipassanā. Practice of vipassanā does not want the present and future khandhas. Not wanting the present khandha is the arising of insight knowledge. Not desiring for the future khandha is the dying of taṇhā.

This is seeing sec ② as dukkha sacca and not connecting with sec ③. If develop more, Path Knowledge arises. Vipassanā has a great benefit. This is right seeing and becoming right view. Vipassanā magga knows dukkha and abandon samudaya.

(Continued to the story of Nakulamātā and Nakulapitā, SN.22.1 Nakulapitusuttaṃ) Leaving the fools of ignorance behind, this khandha is never healthy. (Not including advanced yogis and ariyas) Here it doesn't mean pain, aches and numbness of the body.

So people who think themselves as healthy are included among the fools. They are talking about it with the blind eyes. Knowing the intrinsic nature of the khandha is ñāṇa eye. How to do the contemplation? Whatever arising in the khandha is a sore coming out and passing away is perishing.

A sore grows out is the body pain and let the contemplative mind as it is. Don't let sorrow and lamentation arise. The ñāṇa mind has to contemplate whatever arises with its own nature. The khandha nature is always perishing. This is saying to the yogis as at the time of observing the khandha with equanimity. It's the equanimity of insight—vipassanupekkhā.

Don't let difficulty come in. Knowing the khandha nature is like this. It happens by itself and nothing to do with oneself and as an alien (parāto). Seeing impermanence is vipassanā and contemplation with equanimity is upekkhā. Combine together is called vipassanupekkhā.

Later it develops into the knowledge of equanimity towards formations—saṅkhār'upekkhā ñāṇa. After that Path Knowledge arises. Does it take long? I am urging you to do it quickly. If not, death can overtake you. The Buddha instructed

them let the body pain and not the mind. Nakulapitā went to see Ven. Sāriputta and told him what the Buddha had said.

Ven. Sāriputta explained for him. Worldlings are taking the five khandhas as me and mine. When encountering the perishing of the khandha, take it as I am in misfortune. And then follow with sorrow, lamentation, pain, grief and despair. These are body pain and mental pain.

A person with the vipassanā contemplation and the knowledge will change with its own nature. But the mind observes with its own nature and no mental pain. It's like watching the flowing water (a still flowing mind). Path factors mind (magga citta) is not a mental pain.

This is the mind contemplating impermanence; or the right knowing mind. Because sec ② not connects with sec ③. With body and mental pains, sec ② connects with ③, and sec ④. If you don't have mental pain, D. A. process ceases in the beginning, in the middle and in the end.

It is because you are in body and mental pain if one of them arises. I didn't give this talk in details before. If no mental pain, the three processes of D. A. are ceased to arise.

身心之苦

1962年9月22日

五蘊(khandha)無時無刻不在變化。「色法」($r\bar{u}pa$)的本質就是變化;地界($pathav\bar{u} dh\bar{u}$ 的性質是「堅硬」,其性質崩解即為變化。若此堅性解體,即為變化。

若火界的熱能消散,這也是一種變化。「受蘊」中,樂受生起後便會滅去;想、 行、識等,也都是因變化而生滅。

因此,說「五蘊」常保健康與穩定,實在毫無根據。應當銘記:五蘊之所以會分解,是因為它的本質本就「不健康」。修觀者應以觀智觀察,凡一切生起者,皆因其不健康之性而走向崩解。

所以它「時時刻刻都不健康」。**聖者知道:若與五蘊分離,方可真正健康。** (無明與迷惑的力量確實不可思議——聖者與凡夫的見解永遠無法會合。)因此,聖者傾向於「不再有蘊」,這就是對「涅槃」的欣喜。他們欣然放下五蘊。

(某些佛教徒將此誤解為「自私」,這是以他們自身的法去錯解佛法。事實上,唯有有愛執者才會有自私與煩惱。有來有去,皆是由愛執而生;如同樹根若被徹底砍斷,就不再重生——這是自然法則。一切法皆無我(sabbe dhammā anattā)。)

然而,凡夫卻渴求下一世再執新蘊之「重擔」。若以**觀智之眼**觀察,便會發現五蘊從不曾健康;在心中所現者,皆是「輪迴之蘊」(vaṭṭa khandha)或「重擔之蘊」(bhāra khandha)。若無此種眼,便不願放下五蘊。

若有此眼,便不欲現有之蘊,更不渴望未來之蘊。因此,必須勤修觀智 (vipassanā)。**觀智的修行,是為了不再渴望現在與未來之蘊。**對現在蘊 不欲,是觀智的生起;對未來蘊不渴,是渴愛的止息。

這就是見「第二支」(viññāṇa、nāma-rūpa、saļāyatana、phassa、vedanā)為「苦諦」,而不再連接「第三支」(taṇhā、upādāna、kamma)。若進一步修發,道智(magga ñāṇa)即會生起。觀智利益甚大:這是「正見」,亦成為「正思惟」。

觀智之道(vipassanā magga)知「苦」而斷「集」。

(接著尊者提到《相應部》SN 22.1《那俱羅父母經》(Nakulapitā Sutta)) 凡夫若仍抱持無明之愚,則此五蘊從來未曾健康(此不包括修行進展之禪修者 與聖者)。此處所說的「不健康」,**不僅是指身體上的疼痛、酸麻或病痛**。

凡自認健康之人,皆屬愚人之列;他們以「盲眼」在談論健康。**了知五蘊本質的,是「智慧之眼」(ñāṇa-eye)。**

那麼,應如何觀照?凡在五蘊中生起之法,皆如潰瘍般冒出,又隨後敗壞。潰瘍生出,即是身體之苦;修行者應以觀照之心如實看待,不應讓悲傷與哀慟生起。

以觀智之心,如實觀察諸法之本性。五蘊的本性,**即是不斷敗壞**。這是對禪修者所說的——當以**平等心**觀照五蘊。這即是「觀智的平等心」— vipassanupekkhā。 不要讓困難進入心中。要知五蘊的本質即是如此:它自行發生,與「我」無關,如同「他物」(parāto)般。見「無常」是觀智,平等觀照是「捨」。二者結合,即稱為「觀智之捨」(vipassanupekkhā)。

此後,將進一步發展為「行捨智」(saṅkhārupekkhā ñāṇa);再接下來,道智(magga ñāṇa)便將現起。

那麼,需要很久嗎?我正勸導你們快速修行。若不如此,死亡將在你未覺察中來臨。

佛陀曾教導:讓身體受苦,不讓心受苦。

那俱羅父(Nakulapitā)曾去見尊者舍利弗,轉述佛陀所說。

舍利弗尊者為他解釋:凡夫將五蘊當作「我」與「我所」,當五蘊敗壞時,便認為「我遭逢不幸」,隨之而起的便是哀傷、哭泣、痛苦、憂悶與絕望——這些即是「身苦」與「心苦」。

然而,若有觀智之人,雖然一切仍隨其自然本性而變化,但其心能如實觀照,不會生起心苦。如同靜觀流水一般(心如水流,流動而平靜)。**具道支之心** (magga citta) 非苦心。

此即是觀察無常之心,或稱為「正知之心」。此時「第二支」未與「第三支」相連。

若有身苦與心苦,則第二支連接了第三支,並連帶了第四支(jāti、jarā、maraṇa)。

若心中無苦,則「緣起三階段」——初、中、後皆無法生起。

因為當你感受「身苦或心苦」的任一者時,就已身處於「苦的流轉」中了。

這是我以往未曾詳細開示的內容。請銘記——**若無心苦,「緣起的三階段」就會止息,不再生起。**

身心之苦

1962年9月22日

五蘊總是在變化。色的本質在變化。地元素(paṭhavīdhātu)的本質是堅硬。解 散其本質就是在變化。如果解散,其堅硬的本質就在變化。

如果熱元素消散,也在變化。在受蘊中,樂受生起並消逝。想蘊、行蘊和識蘊, 都在變化中生起和消逝。

因此,沒有什麼可以說五蘊總是健康和穩定的。我們必須記住,所有五蘊都會崩解,因為它們不健康的本質。透過內觀智,觀照任何生起的現象,因為它們不健康的本質而崩解。

因此,它隨時都是不健康的。聖者知道,如果脫離五蘊,它將是健康的(無明和愚癡的力量非常驚人。聖者和世俗者的觀點永遠不會相遇)。因此,他們寧願沒有五蘊。這就是對涅槃的讚賞。他們樂於放下五蘊。

(一些佛教徒認為這是自私。這是用他們自己的教導來誤解佛法。只有執著的 人才無法擺脫自私和煩惱。就像樹根被切斷後永遠不會再生長一樣。這是自然 法則。一切法無我。)

但對於世俗者來說,他們渴望下一個負擔沉重的五蘊。如果您用內觀的眼睛來 看,就會發現它從來都不是健康的。它在心中顯現為輪迴的五蘊或負擔沉重的 五蘊。如果您沒有這種眼睛,您將不願意放下五蘊。

如果您有這種眼睛,您就不想要現在的五蘊,也不渴望未來的五蘊。因此,您必須努力修行內觀。內觀的修行是不想要現在和未來的五蘊。不想要現在的五蘊是內觀智的生起。不渴望未來的五蘊是渴愛的死亡。

這就是將第二部分視為苦諦,並且不與第三部分連接。如果進一步發展,道智就會生起。內觀有很大的益處。這是正見的生起,並成為正確的觀點。內觀道知道苦,並捨棄集。

(繼續講述那拘羅母和那拘羅父的故事,SN.22.1 Nakulapitusuttam)拋下愚癡的傻瓜,這個五蘊從來都不是健康的。(不包括高級瑜伽士和聖者)這裡並不是指身體的疼痛、酸痛和麻木。

因此,認為自己健康的人都被列為傻瓜。他們用盲目的眼睛談論它。了解五蘊的內在本質是智眼。如何進行觀照?五蘊中生起的任何事物都是一個長出的瘡,而消逝則是滅亡。

長出一個瘡是身體的痛苦,讓觀照的心保持原樣。不要讓悲傷和哀號生起。智心必須以其自身的本質觀照任何生起的現象。五蘊的本質總是在滅亡。這是在

告訴瑜伽士們,在以平等心觀察五蘊時。這是內觀的平等心——vipassanupekkhā。

不要讓困難進入。了解五蘊的本質就是如此。它自行發生,與自己無關,並且像一個外來者(parāto)。看到無常是內觀,以平等心觀照是捨。結合在一起稱為 vipassanupekkhā。

後來它發展為對行蘊的平等心智——saṅkhār'upekkhā ñāṇa。之後,道智生起。它需要很長時間嗎?我敦促您趕快去做。否則,死亡會趕上您。佛陀指示他們讓身體痛苦,而不是心靈痛苦。那拘羅父去見舍利弗尊者,並告訴他佛陀所說的話。

舍利弗尊者為他解釋。世俗者將五蘊視為我和我所。當遇到五蘊的滅亡時,認為自己是不幸的。然後隨之而來的是悲傷、哀號、痛苦、悲傷和絕望。這些是身體的痛苦和精神的痛苦。

一個擁有內觀觀照和知識的人會隨其自身的本質而改變。但心靈會以其自身的本質觀察,而沒有精神上的痛苦。就像觀看流動的水(靜止流動的心靈)。道支的心(magga citta)不是精神上的痛苦。

這是觀照無常的心靈;或正確認知的心靈。因為第二部分不與第三部分連接。 有了身體和精神上的痛苦,第二部分連接第三部分,以及第四部分。如果您沒 有精神上的痛苦,緣起的過程就會在開始、中間和結束時止息。

如果您有身體和精神上的痛苦,是因為其中之一生起。我以前沒有詳細地講述這個。如果沒有精神上的痛苦,緣起的三個過程就會止息生起。

How to Die with Feelings?

23rd and 24th September 1962

Of the three kinds of feelings, one of them always exists. It's called the aggregate of feeling—vedanākkhandha. Therefore, it is not devoid of feeling at any time. Someone observes with knowledge always discerns one of it. If it's free from feeling, becomes Nibbāna. So without vedanā is Nibbāna.

A monk asked the Buddha, "One person has knowledge and the other without it, and both of them experience three kinds of feeling. What are the differences between them?"

Their reactions are different. Contemplation of the mind includes feeling and contemplation of feeling also includes the mind. Therefore, I give this talk to you. First, I'll talk about the person without knowledge.

For example, hitting with a thorn and painful feeling arises, and then followed with unpleasant mental feeling (domanassa vedanā). Hit by a feeling and it becomes unwholesome, after that, followed with taṇhā, the desire for feeling better.

Dependent Arising process is turning in to a cycle: from the end with sorrow (soka), lamentation (pariveda) ... to the beginning ... ignorance (avijjā) → mental formation (saṅkhāra). Don't know the arising of phenomenon includes ignorance—delusion. Three kinds of D. A. processes arise (lobba, dosa, and moha).

Therefore, becoming a person without knowledge is frightening. Only dhammas leading to the painful existences are arising (apāyabhūmi). From the point of contemplation of feeling, it's very bad. Die with anger and go to hell realms. With the desire of getting well (taṇhā), go to the realms of ghosts (petas).

Without contemplation and die with ignorance—delusion, go to the animal realms. Dhamma is leading people there. A person without knowledge has disadvantages in the present and samsāra. Compare with your donations and merits,

every day from dukkha vedanās which connect the three kinds of D. A. processes are uncountable.

Therefore, the Buddha ought to say that 100,000 people died and no one took rebirths in the blissful planes (sugati). The life of a not-knowing is very bad indeed. It's clear that without approaching a wise person (i.e., kalyāṇa mitta) can't realize Nibbāna. A person with knowledge is not in this way.

If dukkha vedanā arises, he contemplates it as impermanence. And then two kinds of D. A. processes are cut off. It is followed with taṇhā if sukha vedanā arises and without knowledge. Again no contemplation means ignorance—delusion (moha).

So he moves on the path to ghost and animal (the cause of taṇhā/avijjā). For the person with knowledge, if sukha vedanā arises, contemplate its impermanence. So he moves on the path to Nibbāna. Without and with contemplations is a big difference between them. These are the paths to apāyas (apāyabhūmi) and Nibbāna respectively—the most miserable path and the path of supreme happiness. Again, without the knowledge, if upekkhā vedanā arises and without contemplation is moving on the path of ignorance towards the animal realm. Even doing merits without knowledge is followed with the D. A. process of taṇhā. It becomes clear that no knowledge is frightening.

The Buddha once asked Ven. Sāriputta on the benefit of having a spiritual friend. Ven. Sāriputta's answer was: he may reach to Nibbāna—the ending of dukkha just because of a spiritual friend. (There were many stories of these in the suttas). According to this sutta (in the Vedanāsaṃyutta), it was clear that people had to live with vipassanā dhamma.

Every day the three types of vedanā are arising in turn. With no contemplation, people are doing kammas to apāyas. And it's quite frightening and far from Nibbāna. It's a great loss. The Buddha taught in the Saccasamytta were quite believable. (Sayadaw continued the talk by telling the story of Sāriputta and how he met his teacher Ven. Assaji).

If you have doubts in the contemplation of feeling, contemplate at contact (phassa) as conditions and feeling arises. And with the contact ceases and feeling also ceases. Continue the contemplation until feeling extincts or comes to an end. And then feeling disappears with the khandha.

You will realize Nibbāna if you can contemplate until vedanā extinct. Ven. Assaji taught Sāriputta that in the khandha only causes and effects existed. With the causes arose, the effect came to be. And with the cessation of the causes, came the cessation of effect. The five khandhas are only in speech. The real existence is impermanent. With this short teaching, Sāriputta was entering the stream.

(Continued to tell the story of Ven. Sāriputta became an arahant). Contemplation on feeling is also good in its own right. Climb up to the higher Path Knowledge with the contemplation of feeling. If you want to enter the stream, be with the contemplation of mind. All these things came from these stories. (It seemed Sayadaw himself practiced in this way.)

At near death, nobody is devoid of feeling. If you die with overcoming vedanā, latent tendency of lust (rāgānusaya), latent disposition of hatred (dosānusaya), and latent tendency of delusion (mohānusaya)—these three latent dispositions will cease.

If you can overcome now, it's good. At near death, to overcome it instantly is not easy. Therefore, the Buddha taught contemplation of feeling as an important subject. Yesterday I also taught about the important of feeling. The Buddha told us to have mindfulness and wisdom and not let the time pass by. I remind you to make effort to see and know earlier the cessation of cause and effect.

What will happen if having knowledge in the khandha? With the cessation of feeling, the khandha also ceases. The cessation of khandha is Nibbāna. In this sutta, it was mentioned as it could be realized Nibbāna. Have to be mindful of the three feelings: pleasant, unpleasant, and neutral feelings when they are arising.

This is called mindfulness—sati. Sampajaññakari—have to follow with wisdom. It includes wisdom not only knowing the arising but also its disappearance.

Knowing the arising is sati and seeing the vanishing is wisdom. Every time feeling arises and knowing with mindfulness is satipaṭṭhāna.

It is Sampajañña-paññā if you can see the vanishing. Every time knowing the arising is sati, knowing the arising and passing away is paññā—impermanence. Therefore, its teaching was including both as sati and sampajañña. Kālam āgameya—not let the time pass over. It taught about knowing the cause and effect.

The third point you still not heard before is important to remember it. For example, on the body, sukha vedanā arises. It's a dependent dhamma and can't arise automatically. It depends on the body. Depend on the body sensitivity (kāyapasāda). Again it depends on the contact of the object. Dependence on the body and contact, sukha vedanā arises. Both of them are anicca.

Therefore, vedanā arises by anicca dhammas. Have to know the time of impermanent cause and impermanent effect. In this way the latent tendency of lust can't follow behind it (vedanā). According to the D. A. Process, taṇhā can't arise. Observe with knowledge on the two periods of arising and passing away.

If dukkha vedanā arises, contemplate its impermanence and latent disposition of aversion—paṭighānusaya dies. D. A. Process is cut off and next khandha not arises.

Impermanence is dukkha sacca. Therefore, vipassanā contemplation is doing the saccanulomika ñāṇa—knowing the truth. So you get the knowledge of knowing the truth. If neutral feeling arises, contemplate its impermanence. And the latent disposition of not knowing ignorance ceases. D. A. process is cut off in the beginning.

The two causes are in the present time (kāla), and the result vedanā also in the present. This way of contemplation of vedanā with the cause and effect time was taught by the Buddha in the Vedanāsaṃyutta.

Contemplate the impermanence of pleasant, unpleasant, and neutral feelings and greed, hatred, and delusion die away. And also D. A. processes are cut off in the middle, in the end and in the beginning (according to the series of pleasant, unpleasant, and neutral feelings).

The Buddha was using similes in the contemplation of feeling. The first was the simile of wick, oil, and light. Wick and oil were impermanent, so the light was also impermanent. The Buddha continued to talk on the realization of Nibbāna.

This sutta was quite long. Feelings die before and the three latent tendencies die later. Here, feelings are impermanent, the contemplative mind is path factors (magga) and with the dying of three latent dispositions (ānusaya). Ānusayas cease without arising. With the cessation of feeling, the heart becomes cool and peaceful because it's without the murderers (kilesas).

Again the Buddha gave another simile for it. It was like a clay pot after fired and left it outside the fire. The cessation of feeling is Nibbāna. The cessation of kilesas is cool and peaceful. If feeling ceases, it's peaceful. The coolness is coming from the cessation of the oppressive feeling. Also without the arising of its companions, it's peaceful (i.e., lobha, dosa, and moha).

So the Path Knowledge has the nature of coolness and peace. Contemplation without the time passing over means not missing the cause and effect or not let kilesa comes in between them.

如何以覺受而死?

1962年9月23日至24日

三受之中,任一時刻必有一受現起,因此稱為「受蘊」(vedanākkhandha)。 換句話說,無時無刻不在受中。具有觀智之人,總是能觀察到其中之一。若能 超越「受」,便可證入涅槃。因此,**無受即是涅槃。**

一位比丘曾問佛陀:「兩人皆有三受現起,一人具足智慧,另一人則無,二者 有何差別?」

差異在於「反應」。觀心時包含受,觀受時也含心。是故尊者特別為此開示此法。

首先說明「無智之人」的情況:

例如:腳被荊棘刺傷,產生身體苦受,隨後心生「憂受」(domanassa vedanā)。一旦被「受」擊中,即轉為不善,接著生起渴求樂受之「渴愛」(taṇhā)。

如此便啟動了「緣起輪轉」:由後段的悲(soka)、哀(parideva)……轉至前段的無明($avijj\bar{a}$)→行($sa\dot{n}kh\bar{a}ra$)。不了解現象的生起即是「無明」——迷惑之根。

於是三種「緣起流」輪番運作:貪(lobha)、瞋(dosa)、癡(moha)之道輪展開。

因此,成為無智之人是極其可怖的事。此人所造之業,皆導向「惡趣」 (apāyabhūmi)。

從「觀受」的角度看,這情況非常危險。

若因瞋而死,將墮地獄;

若含渴望(tanhā)求痊癒而死,將生為餓鬼;

若無觀照,因無明而死,則轉生畜生界。

法本身正引導人向此而去。

無智之人,不但現世損失巨大,於輪迴中亦極為不利。相比於你所造的善業與布施,每天因「苦受」而觸發的三種緣起輪次數,實無法計算。

因此佛陀才會說:十萬人死去,無一人得生善趣(sugati)。 凡夫的生命實在令人遺憾。由此可知,若未親近善知識(kalyāṇa-mitta),絕 無可能證得涅槃。

而「有智者」則非如此:

當苦受現起時,他觀其無常。由此,兩支緣起流被斷除。

若樂受現起而無智慧者,將起「渴愛」。若又無觀照,即是「無明」。

因此,他便踏上鬼道與畜生道之路(因為 tanhā 與 avijjā 之故)。若是有智者,當樂受生起時,即觀其無常,因此走上了通往涅槃之道。

是否具觀照,兩者差異極大:**一條是通往惡趣之路,另一條是通往極樂之道。**

再者,若無智者遇中性受(upekkhā vedanā)且無觀照時,則踏上無明之道,走向畜生界。

即使是修福行善,若無智慧,也仍由渴愛之緣起導向輪迴。由此可見:無智,極其可怖。

佛陀曾問尊者舍利弗:「有善知識之利益為何?」

尊者答道:「正因有善知識,可導人證得涅槃——苦之止息。」(經中有許多相應的故事。)

依據《受相應》(Vedanāsaṃyutta),可明確知曉:**眾生應以觀智法** (vipassanā dhamma) 生活。

每天三受交替現起。若不觀照,眾生便造業趨向惡趣。這不僅可怖,而且遠離 涅槃,是極大的損失。

佛陀於《諦相應》(Saccasaṃyutta)中所說,真實可信。

(尊者接著講述舍利弗如何遇見尊者阿私陀(Assaji)的故事。)

若你對「觀受」尚有疑惑,應從「觸」(phassa)為緣而觀:觸為因,受即生; 觸滅,受亦滅。

持續觀照,直到「受」滅。當「受」與蘊同時止息時,便能證得涅槃。

尊者阿私陀曾教導舍利弗:「於五蘊之中,唯有『因與果』而已。因生故果生, 因滅故果滅。」

五蘊僅是言語上的存在,實相上,唯有無常法。

舍利弗僅憑這簡短的教法,即得「入流」(sotāpatti)。

(尊者接著講述舍利弗證得阿羅漢的過程。)

觀受,具有獨特之利益。

若你欲證更高之「道智」,觀受亦能助你。

若你欲入流,則以「觀心」為要。

這些法益,皆從上述故事中得知。(看來尊者本人即是如此修行。)

臨命終時,**無人能離於受**。

若你能於臨終之際超越受,則三種「隨眠」(anusaya)將斷盡:

貪隨眠(rāgānusaya)、瞋隨眠(dosānusaya)、癡隨眠(mohānusaya)。

若你今生即能超越,那是極好之事;因為臨終之際要立刻超越並不容易。

是故佛陀將「觀受」列為修行之重點。昨日我亦談到受的重要性。 佛陀教導我們應具「念」(sati)與「慧」(paññā),**莫讓時光空過**。 我再次提醒你們,應精進修行,早日見證「因果之滅」。

若於五蘊中具有智慧,則「受滅」時,「蘊」亦隨之滅。**蘊之滅即是涅槃。** 此經中即有言:「此即是證得涅槃。」

我們應於三受現起之時保持「念」: 樂受、苦受與不苦不樂受。

這即是所謂的「正念」(sati);接續以「正知」(sampajañña)——這不僅是知「生起」,更是見「滅去」。

知「生起」即是「念」;見「滅去」即是「慧」。 凡每一次「受」現起,若以「念」知之,即是「念住」(satipaṭṭhāna); 若能見其滅去,即是「正知慧」(sampajaññā paññā)。 知「生」與「滅」,即見「無常」。

因此,**佛陀的教法同時涵攝「正念」與「正知」。** 「Kālam āgameyya」——**不可讓時光空過**,這是佛陀對「觀因果」之教導。

第三點你們以前未曾聽聞,現在應特別記得:

例如:當身體生起「樂受」,這並非自動生起之法,而是「緣生法」——依於身體之「淨身」(kāyapasāda)與所緣對觸之條件而現起。

身與觸二者皆為「無常法」,因此,受是由無常因緣所生。

我們應明知:「無常因與無常果」的時間點,則「貪隨眠」就無從附著。 根據緣起法,tanhā無法生起。

以智慧觀照生起與滅去之兩階段:

若「苦受」現起,觀其無常,則「瞋隨眠」(paṭighānusaya)止息,緣起之流中斷,下一蘊不再生起。

無常即是苦諦(dukkha sacca)。因此,「觀無常」即是修習「隨順真理智」 (saccānulomika ñāṇa)——得「知真理之智」。

若中性受生起,觀其無常,則「癡隨眠」止息,緣起流於最初即中斷。

兩種「因」在當下發生,所生之受也是當下果。

這種從因果時間上來觀受的方式,是佛陀於《受相應》中所教導。

觀察樂受、苦受與捨受的無常,則貪、瞋、癡三毒即滅。

並且, 緣起流在中段、終段與初段皆被截斷(依三受的次序而異)。

佛陀亦以譬喻說明觀受:

第一個譬喻為:「燈芯、油與火焰」——燈芯與油為無常,火焰亦然。

佛陀隨後繼續談到涅槃之證得。

此經頗為冗長:「受」先滅,「三隨眠」後滅。

在此,「受」為無常,觀照之心為「道支」(magga);

當「三隨眠」滅而不復生,即是「斷隨眠」的果報。

當「受」止息,心即清涼安寧,因已無「殺手」(kilesa)存在。

佛陀又舉另一譬喻:

好比陶器經火燒後,放置於爐外——受之止息即是涅槃;

煩惱止息即是清涼與寂靜。

若「受」止息,則清涼自然隨之而來,因「壓迫之受」已滅。

再者,當其「同黨」不再生起(即貪、瞋、癡),則心更得寂靜。

因此,「道智」具有「清涼與寧靜」的本質。

所謂「不讓時間空過的觀照」,即是不錯失因果之點,不讓煩惱從中介入。

如何帶著感受死亡?

1962年9月23日和24日

在三種感受中,始終存在其中一種。它被稱為感受蘊(vedanākkhandha)。因此,任何時候都不會沒有感受。以知識觀察的人始終認知其中一種。如果脫離感受,就會變成涅槃。因此,沒有感受就是涅槃。

一位比丘問佛陀:「一個人有知識,另一個人沒有知識,他們都體驗到三種感受。他們之間有什麼區別?」

他們的反應不同。心的觀照包括感受,感受的觀照也包括心。因此,我向你們講述這個。首先,我將談論沒有知識的人。

例如,被荊棘刺傷,痛苦的感受生起,然後是令人不愉快的心靈感受 (domanassa vedanā)。被感受擊中,它變得不善,之後是渴愛(taṇhā),渴 望感覺更好。

緣起過程轉變為一個循環:從悲傷(soka)、哀號(pariveda)的結尾……到開頭……無明(avijjā)→行(saṅkhāra)。不了解現象的生起包括無明——愚癡。三種緣起過程生起(貪、瞋、癡)。

因此,成為一個沒有知識的人是可怕的。只有導致痛苦存在的法才會生起 (apāyabhūmi)。從感受觀照的角度來看,這非常糟糕。帶著憤怒死去,去地 獄道。帶著想要好起來的欲望(taṇhā),去餓鬼道(petas)。

沒有觀照,帶著無明——愚癡死去,去畜生道。法將人們引向那裡。一個沒有知識的人在現在和輪迴中都有不利之處。與你們的捐贈和功德相比,每天從連接三種緣起過程的苦受(dukkha vedanās)是數不清的。

因此,佛陀應該說,十萬人死去,沒有人在善趣(sugati)中轉世。不了解的生活確實非常糟糕。顯然,沒有接近智者(即善知識,kalyāṇa mitta)就無法證悟涅槃。一個有知識的人不是這樣。

如果苦受生起,他會將其觀照為無常。然後兩種緣起過程被切斷。如果樂受生起,而沒有知識,就會隨之而來的是渴愛。再次沒有觀照意味著無明——愚癡(moha)。

因此,他走上餓鬼和畜生道(渴愛/無明的原因)。對於有知識的人來說,如果樂受生起,就觀照其無常。因此,他走上涅槃的道路。有觀照和沒有觀照之間有很大的區別。這些分別是通往惡趣(apāyabhūmi)和涅槃的道路——最悲慘的道路和至高幸福的道路。再次,沒有知識,如果捨受生起,而沒有觀照,就是走上無明通往畜生道的道路。即使沒有知識地行善,也會隨之而來的是渴愛的緣起過程。顯然,沒有知識是可怕的。

佛陀曾經問舍利弗尊者,擁有精神朋友的好處是什麼。舍利弗尊者的回答是:他可能僅僅因為一個精神朋友而到達涅槃——苦的止息。(經文中有很多這樣的故事)。根據這部經(在《受相應》Vedanāsaṃyutta中),顯然人們必須以內觀法生活。

每天,三種感受輪流生起。沒有觀照,人們正在造作惡趣的業。這非常可怕,並且遠離涅槃。這是一個巨大的損失。佛陀在《諦相應》(Saccasamytta)中教導的是相當可信的。(尊者繼續講述舍利弗的故事,以及他如何遇到他的老師阿說示尊者。)

如果您對感受的觀照有疑問,請觀照觸(phassa)作為條件,感受生起。隨著觸的止息,感受也止息。繼續觀照,直到感受消失或結束。然後感受隨著五蘊消失。

如果您可以觀照直到感受消失,您將證悟涅槃。阿說示尊者教導舍利弗,五蘊中只有因果存在。隨著原因的生起,結果隨之而來。隨著原因的止息,結果也隨之止息。五蘊只是在言語中存在。真正的存在是無常。透過這個簡短的教導,舍利弗進入了入流。

(繼續講述舍利弗尊者成為阿羅漢的故事)。 感受的觀照本身也很好。 透過感受的觀照,攀登到更高的道智。如果您想進入入流,請進行心的觀照。 所有這些都來自這些故事。 (尊者似乎自己以這種方式修行。)

在臨終時,沒有人會沒有感受。如果您帶著克服感受而死去,貪欲的潛在傾向(rāgānusaya)、瞋恨的潛在傾向(dosānusaya)和愚癡的潛在傾向(mohānusaya)——這三種潛在傾向將會止息。

如果您現在可以克服它,那就很好。在臨終時,立即克服它並不容易。因此,佛陀教導感受的觀照是一個重要的主題。昨天我也教導了感受的重要性。佛陀告訴我們要有正念和智慧,不要讓時間流逝。我提醒你們努力儘早看到和了解因果的止息。

如果五蘊中有知識,會發生什麼?隨著感受的止息,五蘊也止息。五蘊的止息就是涅槃。在這部經中,提到它可以證悟涅槃。當樂受、苦受和捨受生起時,必須正念於這三種感受。

這被稱為正念(sati)。sampajaññakari——必須以智慧隨之而來。它包括不僅知道生起,而且知道其消失的智慧。知道生起是正念,看到消失是智慧。每次感受生起,以正念知道,就是念處。

如果您能看到消失,那就是 sampajañña-paññā。每次知道生起是正念,知道生起和消逝就是般若——無常。因此,他的教導包括正念和正知。kālam āgameya——不要讓時間流逝。它教導了了解因果。

你們以前沒有聽過的第三點很重要,要記住它。例如,在身體上,樂受生起。這是一個緣起的法,不能自動生起。它取決於身體。取決於身體的敏感度(kāyapasāda)。再次,它取決於對象的接觸。取決於身體和接觸,樂受生起。它們都是無常。

因此,感受由無常的法生起。必須了解無常的因和無常的果的時間。以這種方式,貪欲的潛在傾向無法隨之而來(感受)。根據緣起過程,渴愛無法生起。用知識觀察生起和消逝的兩個時期。

如果苦受生起,觀照其無常,厭惡的潛在傾向——paṭighānusaya 就會死亡。緣 起過程被切斷,下一個五蘊不會生起。

無常是苦諦。因此,內觀觀照正在進行隨順諦智——了解真理。因此,您獲得了了解真理的知識。如果捨受生起,觀照其無常。無明的潛在傾向——無知就會止息。緣起過程在開始時被切斷。

兩個原因都在現在(kāla),結果感受也在現在。佛陀在《受相應》中教導了這種以因果時間觀照感受的方式。

觀照樂受、苦受和捨受的無常,貪、瞋、癡就會消亡。並且緣起過程也會在中間、結尾和開頭被切斷(根據樂受、苦受和捨受的順序)。

佛陀在感受的觀照中使用了譬喻。第一個是燈芯、油和光的譬喻。燈芯和油是無常的,所以光也是無常的。佛陀繼續談論涅槃的證悟。

這部經很長。感受先消亡,三種潛在傾向後消亡。這裡,感受是無常的,觀照的心是道支(magga),隨著三種潛在傾向(ānusaya)的死亡。潛在傾向在沒有生起的情況下止息。隨著感受的止息,心變得涼爽和平靜,因為它沒有殺手(煩惱)。

佛陀再次為此給出另一個譬喻。它就像一個燒製過的陶罐,離開火後放在外面。 感受的止息就是涅槃。煩惱的止息是涼爽和平靜。如果感受止息,那就是平靜。 涼爽來自於壓迫性感受的止息。沒有其同伴的生起,它也是平靜的(即貪、瞋、 癡)。

因此,道智具有涼爽和平靜的本質。沒有時間流逝的觀照意味著不遺漏因果,或不讓煩惱介入它們之間。

Should Know One's Value

26th September 1962

We construct the four woeful planes of existences from here. We can also demolish it from here. So this human world is the main centre. According to the mind process of the D. A., we build hell fire in hell realms. If we end the mind process leading to hells, hell fire and hell woks disappear.

By creating kammas to heavens, celestial mansions are appearing there. By doing kammas to Nibbāna, all the worlds disappear (31 realms of existence). Therefore, you can get goodness or badness in the human world. It's like the main railway station from Rangoon (Yan-gon) to Mandalay.

Human world is the precious place. If you can't use it properly, coming here for the provisions to the woeful existences. (Most human beings don't know the Buddha's Dhamma and having the rare chances of arriving here; instead of cultivate goodness and doing many unwholesome kammas for the above purpose without knowingly).

All these things are relying on the companions. From here you can go to hells, blissful places, and Nibbāna, any place you desire. You'll follow people much closer to you. Therefore, companions are very important. As like there are three kinds of companions and also three types of mind elements. Therefore, training one's mind is the first main point.

For example, in seeing the form of a flower and you desire it. Then, the mind is leading you there and it is not a person. Again, you see a flower and your mind wants it to offer the Buddha. And it's leading you to sugati—blissful destination. If your mind can contemplate its impermanence and it's leading you to Nibbāna. With a form dugati, sugati, and Nibbāna arise respectively (painful and blissful existences and Nibbāna element).

If you don't meet with spiritual friends (kalyāṇamitta), normally the mind leading to apāyas are arising more. Therefore, the Buddha said that the minds of living beings were enjoying in unwholesomeness. So, Kalyāṇamitta is very important. We ourselves don't know how to cut off D. A. processes. With his help complete our goals.

(Continued the story of Mālunkyāputta) The Buddha instructed Ven. Mālunkyāputta on practice. "A form is not seen before and also not being seen now. Does your mind have any desire for this form to arise?" The Buddha continued to ask him the same way for other sense doors and objects.

For example, at the moment of just seeing a form, the desire and wanting mind can't arise. If you can stop at seeing and knowing, the mind of desire, clinging and the effort of action to get it not arise. And then you can reach Nibbāna. Just stop at seeing and knowing.

This is also a kind of vipassanā. Just stop at hearing and knowing, etc. If desire, aversion and delusion not arise, one can reach Nibbāna. The Buddha gave the shortest instruction. It means not lost mindfulness. If lacking mindfulness and D. A. process continues. Seeing/knowing, hearing/knowing, etc., and lobha, dosa, moha not arise. With this contemplation, Ven. Mālunkyāputta became an arahant.

He could stop with just seeing, hearing, etc. But you all can't stop this way. The Buddha in his 45 years of teaching, this instruction was only given to Ven. Mālunkyāputta and Dārucīriya (Bāhiya). It was taught according to the person's nature.

You have to follow the dhamma relating to most people. For you, seeing consciousness arises. And you have to contemplate quickly from behind as after seeing and passing away. Ditthe ditthamattam bhavissati (i.e., seeing as just seeing)—is very difficult to stop. All others entered Nibbāna with impermanence (Continued to talk on Cittānupassanā).

Contemplation of impermanence is in sec ②. The Buddha taught that it was dukkha sacca (i.e., the five khandhas). Therefore, if you can contemplate

impermanence, get the Saccanulonika ñāṇa—knowledge in accordance with truth. It's important that impermanence must follow with magga. Nibbāna will be realized sooner or later.

應知自我價值

1962年9月26日

我們在此人間擔作了誦往四惡趣之路;

同樣地,也可從這裡毀壞它。

因此,人間是關鍵的中心。

依照心識的「緣起流程」,我們造作令地獄火燃燒的因;

若能終止導向地獄的心流,地獄的火與刑具亦隨之滅失。

造作升天之業,則天界宮殿於彼方現起;

若修行導向涅槃之道,則三十一有界皆隨之止息。

因此,善與惡之果報,皆可由人間決定。

人間就如仰光通往曼德勒的總車站一樣

人間即是珍貴之地。

若不能善用此身,便等同從此處攜帶資糧前往四惡趣。

(大多數眾生不了解佛陀的法·難得生而為人·卻不勤修善法·反造諸惡業· 導致墮入惡趣·且不自知。)

這一切都取決於所交往的「伴侶」(即親近的對象)。

從此處(人間),你可以去地獄、善趣、乃至涅槃,端視你欲往何方而行。你會隨著與你最親近的人走,因此**善伴侶(kalyāṇamitta)極為重要。**

正如有三種伴侶,也有三種心所,

所以,**訓練自己的心**是首要之事。

舉例而言:你看到一朵花,內心生起愛欲想佔有,那是心引導你走向欲界,並非「人」將你帶去;

又如,你看到一朵花,心中起意欲供養佛,那心即引你向善趣而行;

若你見花即觀無常,那麼此心則引你走向涅槃。

故從一朵花開始,欲界苦趣(dugati)、善趣(sugati)、與涅槃(Nibbāna-dhātu)可相繼而生。

若未得遇善知識(kalyāṇamitta),

心多半會走向惡趣之道。

因此佛陀曾說: 眾生之心, 樂於不善法中流轉。

是故「善友」實為關鍵。

我們自己不知道如何斷除「緣起流程」(paţiccasamuppāda), 但在善知識的引導下,得以成就修行之目標。

(尊者接著講述《瑪倫俱子經》(Māluṅkyaputta Sutta)的故事。)

佛陀曾對尊者瑪倫俱子開示修行之道:

「有一個色,你過去未曾見過,現在也未正見,那麼,你的心會對它生起貪愛嗎?」

佛陀又依此方式,針對其他諸根與所緣接續發問。

例如:僅止於「見色當下」,尚未進一步造作時,愛與欲求尚未生起。 若你能在「見」與「知」的當下停止——**不再進入欲求、執取與造業的階段**, 那你便能走向涅槃。

只止於「見」與「知」即可。

這其實也是一種**觀法**(vipassanā): 只止於「聞而知」亦然。 若貪、瞋、癡不生,即可通往涅槃。

佛陀給予了最簡短、最直接的教導,意謂著:「不失念」,不失念即不墮入緣 起流程。

若失念,則緣起流程將繼續展開。

若「見即見」、「聞即聞」,而不生貪瞋癡,則得解脫。

以此修法,尊者瑪倫俱子即證阿羅漢果。

他能在「見、聞」處即止; 但你們眾人尚無法止於此。

佛陀在四十五年教法中,這類極簡指導,僅授予尊者瑪倫俱子與尊者樹衣者($B\bar{a}hiya\ D\bar{a}ruc\bar{i}riya$),

因為這是依「根器特別成熟之人」而設的對機法門。

至於你們,應依多數人之根器所設之法來修行。

你們在「見」時,見識生起,應立即於其後迅速觀照其「生起與滅去」。 「於見即見」(diţţhe diţţhamattaṃ bhavissati)——對大多數人來說實難做到。 其他修行者皆以觀「無常」而證入涅槃。

(尊者此處接續講述「觀心」——cittānupassanā。)

「觀無常」即位於「緣起流程」之第二段。

佛陀曾教示:「這便是苦諦。」(即五蘊皆是苦)

因此,若你能觀照無常,即得「隨順真理智」(saccānulomika ñāṇa)。

但重點在於:所觀的無常,必須與「道支」相應。

如此一來,涅槃定會在某一時刻被證得,或早或遲。

應知自身價值

1962年9月26日

我們從這裡建造四惡趣。我們也可以從這裡拆除它。因此,這個人間是主要中心。根據緣起的心理過程,我們在地獄道建造地獄之火。如果我們結束導致地 獄的心理過程,地獄之火和地獄鑊將消失。

透過造作天界的業,天上的宮殿在那裡出現。透過造作涅槃的業,所有世界都消失(三十一有)。因此,您可以在人間獲得善或惡。它就像從仰光(Yangon)到曼德勒的主要火車站。

人間是珍貴的地方。如果您不能正確地使用它,來到這裡就是為了給惡趣提供 給養。(大多數人類不了解佛陀的法,並且有難得的機會來到這裡;他們不是 培養善行,而是無知地造作許多不善的業,以達到上述目的。)

所有這些都依賴於同伴。從這裡,您可以去地獄、快樂的地方和涅槃,任何您 想要的地方。您會跟隨與您更親近的人。因此,同伴非常重要。就像有三種同 伴和三種心靈元素一樣。因此,訓練自己的心是第一個主要重點。

例如,看到一朵花的形狀,您渴望它。然後,心靈引導您到那裡,它不是一個 人。再次,您看到一朵花,您的心想要將其供養給佛陀。它引導您到善趣。如 果您的心可以觀照其無常,它會引導您到涅槃。透過一個形狀,分別生起惡趣、 善趣和涅槃(痛苦的存在和快樂的存在以及涅槃的元素)。 如果您沒有遇到精神上的朋友(kalyāṇamitta),通常會更多地生起引導到惡趣的心靈。因此,佛陀說,眾生的心靈都在享受不善。因此,善知識非常重要。 我們自己不知道如何切斷緣起過程。在他的幫助下,我們才能完成目標。

(繼續講述摩倫迦子(Mālunkyāputta)的故事)佛陀指示摩倫迦子尊者修行。「以前沒有見過的形狀,現在也沒有見過。您的心對這個形狀的生起有任何欲望嗎?」佛陀繼續以同樣的方式詢問他其他根門和對象。

例如,在僅僅看到一個形狀的瞬間,欲望和想要的心靈無法生起。如果您可以 停留在看和知道,那麼欲望、執著和採取行動以獲得它的努力就不會生起。然 後您可以到達涅槃。僅僅停留在看和知道。

這也是一種內觀。僅僅停留在聽和知道等等。如果欲望、厭惡和愚癡不生起, 人們就可以到達涅槃。佛陀給出了最短的指示。這意味著不要失去正念。如果 缺乏正念,緣起過程就會繼續。看/知道、聽/知道等等,以及貪、瞋、癡不生 起。透過這種觀照,摩倫迦子尊者成為阿羅漢。

他可以停留在僅僅看、聽等等。但你們都無法以這種方式停止。佛陀在他四十 五年的教導中,這個指示僅給予了摩倫迦子尊者和達魯奇里亞(巴希亞)。它 是根據人的本性教導的。

您必須遵循與大多數人相關的法。對於您來說,見識生起。您必須從後面快速觀照,就像看見和消逝之後一樣。「所見即所見」(diţţhe diţţhamattaṃ bhavissati)——很難停止。所有其他人都是透過無常進入涅槃的(繼續講述心隨觀)。

無常的觀照在第二部分。佛陀教導說,它是苦諦(即五蘊)。因此,如果您可以觀照無常,您將獲得隨順諦智——與真理相符的知識。重要的是,無常必須伴隨道。涅槃遲早會實現。

Mistaken with Nibbana

4th to 5th October 1962

[Sayadaw gave these two talks on ten insight corruptions connected with Nibbāna. It was two weeks before his passing away. Round about three months before he delivered a talk on the qualities of a Stream Enterer in Mogok for the last day there. He knew himself he would not come back again. All these were checking for oneself in practice.

Sayadaw gave an example of fake gold taking the place of real gold in daily use by most people. And it became popularity. He mentioned two kinds of counterfeit dhammas; i.e., theory and practice—pariyatti and paṭipatti. We can find these in some Buddhists.]

T1

In the sāsana with the counterfeit dhammas are arising and kilesa increasing. So very few are becoming arahants. At the time of discerning impermanence counterfeit dhammas are arising similar to Path and Fruition Knowledge. They hinder the Path and Fruition knowledge. Yogis must distinguish them from the real. The practitioners are sure to encounter it.

You do not yet have the knowledge of rise and fall—udayabhaya ñāṇa if you still not encounter it. After the encounter, you will stray away from the path since you don't know how to deal with them. Therefore, it's important.

If you discern impermanence:

① Light (obhasa): Light can come out from the body. The yogi takes it as the Path Knowledge and stops with the practice. It's spreading out from the whole body and for some yogis, it as high as a toddy palm tree; for the Buddha, it reaches downward to the Avīci Hell and upwardly to the Brahma World. By stopping the

practice, impermanence disappears. And it stops reaching higher knowledge and Nibbāna. With yogis no light appears, and

- ② Knowledge (ñāṇa): Knowledge becomes sharp. Impermanence and path factors (anicca/magga) are arising without interruption and no kilesa comes in between them. The yogi takes its sharpness as the Path Knowledge and stops with the practice. If any light comes out, not paying any attention to it and continue the contemplation of impermanence. If the knowledge becomes sharp, don't stop at it and continue contemplation of impermanence.
- ③ Zest/Rapture (Pīti): Rapture can arise. The body feels lightness and it seems moving upwards.
 - 4 Tranquility (Passaddhi): Mind and body become tranquil.
 - (5) Happiness (Sukha): Body and mind feel happiness.

After seeing conditioned impermanence, feel happiness. If it's Nibbāna, shouldn't see impermanence. It is because of the yogi's character and different kinds of counterfeit dhammas arises (There are 10). If you still seeing impermanence, don't stop at it. You can decide it as counterfeit dhammas. In the place of real Path Knowledge and vipassanā knowledge, it comes in for obstruction.

Among five of them (i.e., the mentioned 5) yogi will encounter one of them. After encountering, have to overcome it and shouldn't stop there. Disenchantment of impermanence and the ending of impermanence must arise successively. If you not encounter them, the practice not develops yet. After encountering, stopping there is a great lost. If you can overcome it, be on the right track.

If one of them arises, it means a person with three wholesome roots—tihetuka (born with non-greed, non-hatred, and non-delusion). If practice diligently in this life, will realize Nibbāna. If a duhetuka person—with double wholesome roots and it will not arise for him. But with the practice only fulfill the pāramī in this life.

The Buddha told us that after having knowledge on practice, did the contemplation [after ñāta pariññā (intellectual knowledge) and do tīrāṇa pariññā (practical knowledge)]: in the beginning of having knowledge, in the middle with practice and in the end abandonment of kilesa. We have to go in this way. In the Buddha time, if he asked the monks to do this, they only did this.

They didn't busy with other things. Therefore, they finished their practices very quickly. They followed one way and many became arahants. (In the 20th century, there were still evident of some Thai Forest Monks and Burmese Monks' Biographies). Increasing of monastic rules was also the cause of monks doing more unwholesome things. They were wasting their time with unwholesome matters.

Therefore, they can't discern impermanence or very weak in their discernments. These five points (from ① light to ⑤ happiness) are from the side of contemplative mind (ñāṇa or ārammaṇika) for making the conclusion. Now I'll make the conclusion from the side of objects (ārammaṇa).

You have to make the conclusion that it's only vipassanā ñāṇa (i.e., not the Path Knowledge) if you see light (i.e., object). Still seeing conditioned phenomena—saṅkhata is vipassanā ñāṇa. Seeing the unconditioned (asaṅkhata) is the Path Knowledge (without the objects of the five khandhas).

Here making the conclusion with knowledge (ñāṇa):If you still seeing impermanence of the sec ② (i.e., the five khandhas in the D. A. process), you have to make the conclusion that it's never Nibbāna.

Therefore, the seeing knowledge is not the Path Knowledge. Only all of the sec ② are ceased is Nibbāna and Path Knowledge. Insight knowledge seeing dukkha sacca and Path Knowledge seeing dukkha nirodha and both are right views.

These are the right series of the practice. Sec @ contemplate sec @ becomes present moment (i.e., sankhāra contemplates sankhāra). In the Milinda Panha, Ven. Nāgasena said to King Milinda, "From seeing impermanence and the mind (nāṇa) turns towards no impermanence is Nibbāna." Impermanence stays as it is, but the mind (nāṇa) turns towards no impermanence.

[The last words were simple and clear but profound for understanding. At the time, ñāṇa inclining towards Nibbāna element, the khandha still exists. Therefore, impermanence still exists. But ñāṇa does not stay with impermanence, instead turns towards no impermanence or no khandha; inclining towards no khandha.]

T2

Counterfeit dhammas are enemies. Counterfeit dhammas arise and real dhammas disappear. Not all of them arise in the yogi. One of them is sure to arise.

⑥ Resolution—Adhimokkha (Some teachers use it as Faith—saddhā. In Sayadaw U Puññananda's talk, he used it as saddhā.

After seeing impermanence very well, saddhā increases in the Triple Gems—Buddha, Dhamma, and Saṅgha. The whole body is cool and happy. The happiness comes from saddhā and covers up the objects of impermanence. And impermanence disappears, taking it as the realization).

Discern impermanence of the whole body as without any gap for a needle between them. And then the yogi makes the conclusion as Path Knowledge and kilesa comes in. Some yogis' kilesa arise near death. During the vipassanā practice it doesn't arise.

Near death, seeing the wrong mental sign (nimitta) and by trying hard, some overcome it. Some encounter with suffering (die with the wrong mental sign). By knowing beforehand yogi can overcome it.

(For this point Sayadaw told the story of Ven. Channa who was very sick. Later committed suicide and seeing the wrong image for rebirth. But he already had some success in his practice before and could correct his mental image at death.)

There are some people taking sloth and torpor as samādhi and don't see impermanence, think it as the Path Knowledge. The Buddha taught for 45 years.

Divided them into three periods and got 15 years each. During the first 15 years, many became arahants with abhiññā—direct knowledge.

(There are six abhiññā: ① Various kinds of supernormal power ② Divine ear ③ Penetration of minds ④ Recollection of past life ⑤ Divine eye ⑥ Destruction of taints.)

After that followed with tevijjā—triple knowledge arahants. After that fewer and fewer became ariyas. Nowadays this is even worse. (tevijjā refers to ① Recollection of past life ② Divine eye ③Destruction of taints)

- ⑦ Exertion—paggaha or viriya; the four kinds of viriya arise clearly and it doesn't like the same viriya as before. And the yogi thinks it as the Path Knowledge.
- (8) Mindfulness—Sati: at any time sati can follow the object. Very sharp sati and take it as sati with the Path Knowledge.

If you make conclusion with the object, it can't be mistaken; still with the object of impermanence and not ending yet.

- (I) Nikanti—attachment: it's clinging taṇhā; clinging to all the experiences as mentioned above. Contemplate its impermanence and go back to one's own meditation objects (for example, with the contemplation of mind, go back to the mind, and with feeling, go back to feeling, etc.)

In conclusion, these are the causes of the disappearance of sāsana (Here means practice sāsana). These are the reasons of disappearance of Realization = pativedha sāsana because it hinders Path and Fruition Knowledge.

You have to contemplate the impermanence of the arising counterfeit dhamma. Or not pay any attention and neglect of them. All of the ten points, only one of them will arise in the yogi.

錯認涅槃

1962年10月4日至5日

【這兩場開示,是莫哥尊者入滅前兩週所說,內容聚焦於十種與涅槃相關的觀智雜染(vipassanūpakkilesa)。大約在三個月前,他於莫哥最後一次講法日談到入流聖者的特質。他已知自己將不再回到此地。這些開示,正是指導行者檢視自身修行狀況的關鍵法語。

尊者舉例說明:世人常將假金當真金使用,久而久之,竟普遍流通;他亦指出兩種佛法的「偽品」:理論上的(pariyatti)與實踐上的(paṭipatti),這在當今佛教徒中可見一斑。】

第一講(T1)

佛教中出現了**假法(偽佛法)**之現象,導致煩惱增長,因此能證得阿羅漢者極少。

在觀察無常時,與道智、果智相似的假法會現起,阻礙真正的道果智慧。 行者務必辨識真偽——修行者一定會遭遇這些現象。

若尚未遇到這些雜染現象,表示尚未達到「生滅智」(udayabbaya ñāṇa); 一旦遇到,卻不知如何應對,便會偏離正道。

因此,學會辨識非常重要。

當你開始觀照無常時,以下現象可能出現:

① 光明 (obhāsa)

身體散發出光,有些行者誤以為這是「道智」而停止修行。 此光有時可遍滿全身,甚至對某些人來說高達椰子樹頂; 佛陀之光,能向下照至阿鼻地獄、向上至梵天界。 若行者因此停止修行,無常現象將消失,導致無法繼續進展至更高智慧與涅槃。 若行者修行中未見光,則無須理會。

② 智慧鋒利 (ñāṇa)

觀照變得極為清晰、銳利,無常與道支(anicca/magga)接連不斷地現起,煩惱無從介入。

行者誤將這種銳利之智當作「道智」,遂停止修行。 若光明出現,勿專注於光,而應繼續觀無常; 若智慧變得銳利,亦不可停留於此,應持續觀照無常。

③ 喜悅 (pīti)

因觀照而生起法喜,身體感到輕安,甚至似乎向上升起。

④ 寧靜 (passaddhi)

身心俱寧,動亂止息。

⑤ 樂 (sukha)

心身俱感安樂,極為愉悅。

行者見「有為法的無常」後生起樂感,若真是涅槃,就不會再見無常。 因行者個性不同,上述現象因緣而起,稱為「假法」。 若仍在觀察無常,便可確定這並非道智,而是觀智雜染。

這些現象出現在真正的道智與觀智之間,具有阻礙性。

在上述五種中,行者通常會遇到其中之一。

遇到後,應克服它,不可停滯於此。

無常的「厭離」與「止息」必須依次現起。

若未遇此等現象,表示修行尚未進展至關鍵階段;

若遇到後卻停住不前,則是極大的損失;

能夠克服它,就表示走在正確之道。

若你遇到其中一項,表示你是具備**三根具足者(tihetuka)**:即與「無貪、無瞋、無癡」俱生。

若今生精進修行,可證得涅槃。

若是雙根(duhetuka)之人,則上述現象不會出現;他們今生修行,僅是圓滿 其波羅蜜而已。

佛陀教導我們:

當知見生起後(ñāta pariññā),應實修(tīraṇa pariññā);

從修行之初(起觀)、中間(實修)到最後(捨斷煩惱),皆須依此次第而行。

佛陀時代,若世尊勸導比丘們修行,他們便依此而修,**不忙於雜務**, 因此能迅速完成修行,證得聖果。

他們僅依一法而行,便有多人證得阿羅漢果。

(二十世紀泰國森林派與部分緬甸尊者傳記,亦有類似證果實例。)

後來戒律條目增多,導致比丘們處理瑣事時間增加,反而做出更多「非善業」, 因而喪失觀照無常的機會,或觀照極其微弱。

上述五項現象(①至⑤)屬於「**觀智之心(ñāṇa)或所緣心(ārammaṇika)**」之雜染。

現在再從「所緣物(ārammaṇa)」角度做結論:

若你見到光明(所緣),就應知:這僅是**觀智**,非「道智」。 只要你仍見「有為法」(saṅkhata),那便是觀智;

若見到「無為法」(asankhata),才是「道智」,即:不再見到五蘊所緣。

此處的結論如下:

若你仍見「第二支」(sec ②,即五蘊:識、名色、六處、觸、受)之無常,則可斷言:**這絕非涅槃。**

故你那「見」的智慧,尚不是「道智」。 唯有「第二支」完全止息時,才是涅槃與道智。

觀智是見苦諦(dukkha sacca),道智是見苦滅(dukkha nirodha),二者皆為「正見」。

這才是正確的修行次第。

「第二支觀第二支」即是當下觀當下,如《彌蘭陀問經》(Milinda Pañha)所說:那伽仙那尊者對彌蘭王說:

「從見無常,心轉向無無常處,即是涅槃。」

也就是說,無常仍在,但「心」(觀智)轉向無無常處。 即:五蘊猶在,但觀智**不再停留於無常**,轉向「不再有無常」、「不再有蘊」 ——轉向涅槃。

第二講(T2)

觀智雜染(偽法)是修行中的敵人。 一旦這些假法現起,真法即不易出現。 雖非每位行者皆會出現十種,但其中至少會遇到一種。

⑥ 勝解(adhimokkha)/信(saddhā)

(有些教師將 adhimokkha 解作「信」,如尊者 U Puññananda 在其講法中即用 saddhā 一詞。)

當行者對無常觀照深入後,對三寶(佛、法、僧)信心大增,身心俱感清涼愉悅。

這種「信樂」所帶來的樂受,會**覆蓋無常的所緣**,導致無常不再現起, 行者因此**誤以為已證得道果**。

舉例來說:觀察整個身體的無常,細致到連一根針都插不進兩生滅之間,行者便自認:「我已證得道智。」此時,煩惱乘隙而入。

有些行者即便修觀期間無煩惱現起,

但臨終時卻因「錯誤心影(nimitta)」生起而動搖,進而墮落。

有些人臨終時拼命對治,得以轉化;

但也有人遭遇痛苦、死於錯誤心影之中。

若能事先理解這些雜染,就能在關鍵時刻戰勝它。

(尊者此處講述《尊者真那(Channa)》之事。真那比丘久病纏身,最終自殺, 臨終時出現不善心影,但他過去修行已有進展,終能於死前修正心念。)

有些行者將「昏沈與睡眠(thīna-middha)」誤認為「禪定」, 不見無常,卻自以為已得道智。

佛陀四十五年弘法,分為三個階段,每階段十五年。 在最初十五年中,許多比丘證得具神通的阿羅漢(abhiññā arahant)。

六種神通 (abhiññā):

- ① 各種神變
- ② 天耳通
- ③ 他心通
- ④ 宿命通
- ⑤天眼通
- ⑥ 漏盡通 (證得涅槃)

接著是證得「三明」(tevijjā)的阿羅漢,即:①宿命通、②天眼通、③漏盡通。

再往後,證果者愈來愈少,至今更為稀少。

⑦ 精進 (paggaha l viriya)

行者體驗到四種精進力顯著現起,與過去不同,遂誤以為已得道智。

⑧ 念 (sati)

正念變得極為敏銳,任何時刻都能追隨所緣, 行者因此誤以為此正念已與道智相應。

若以「所緣」來作判斷,便不會錯認—— 只要仍在無常所緣之中,便未至終點。

⑨ 觀照之平等心(ājavana)/捨(upekkhā)

此處尊者用詞為「ājavana」,即指「觀照中之平等心」。

⑩ 昧著 (nikanti) / 貪著

這是對前述九種經驗的**愛著(taṇhā)**, 因執取而不欲捨離。

對治之法是: 觀照此貪著的無常,

或直接忽略它,回歸自身原本的觀照所緣——

若你是觀心,則回到心;觀受,則回到受。

結語

這十種觀智雜染,是導致正法(sāsana)衰敗的主因。 此處所指的「正法」,即「實踐之正法(paṭipatti sāsana)」。

它們阻礙了「證悟之正法(paṭivedha sāsana)」, 使得道果智無法生起。

正確之修行方式是:

- 會當上述雜染現起時,應觀其「無常」;
- **├** 或者,**完全不加理會**,持續回到正念與正觀。

在這十種之中,行者通常只會遇到其中一種。

總結提醒:

- 若仍見「無常所緣」,即尚未至涅槃;
- 不論遇到何種雜染,勿認為是道智或果智;
- 不執著,不退轉,持續觀照,即能通達真智、斷盡煩惱。

這篇開示是莫哥尊者入滅前所說的重點法語,

目的在於保護行者不墮於觀智雜染之陷阱,

使人得以辨明「涅槃非境界之樂相」,

而是超越一切有為現象的究竟止息。

錯認涅槃

1962年10月4日至5日

[尊者講述了這兩次關於與涅槃相關的十種觀智染的開示。這是在他涅槃前兩週。 大約三個月前,他在莫哥最後一天講述了關於入流果的品質。他知道自己不會 再回來了。所有這些都是在修行中自我檢查。 尊者舉了一個假黃金取代真黃金在大多數人日常生活中使用的例子。它變得流行起來。他提到了兩種偽造的法;即理論和實踐——pariyatti 和 paṭipatti。我們可以在一些佛教徒中找到這些。]

T1

在佛陀的教法(sāsana)中,偽造的法正在生起,煩惱也在增加。因此,成為阿羅漢的人非常少。在認知無常時,會生起類似於道智和果智的偽造的法。它們阻礙了道智和果智。瑜伽士必須將它們與真實的區分開來。修行者肯定會遇到它。

如果您還沒有遇到生滅智(udayabhaya ñāṇa),您還沒有獲得生滅智。遇到之後,由於您不知道如何處理它們,您將偏離道路。因此,這很重要。

如果您認知無常:

- ①光(obhasa):光可以從身體中發出。瑜伽士將其視為道智,並停止修行。 它從全身擴散開來,對於一些瑜伽士來說,它高達棕櫚樹;對於佛陀來說,它 向下到達阿鼻地獄,向上到達梵天世界。透過停止修行,無常消失了。並且它 停止了達到更高的知識和涅槃。瑜伽士沒有光出現,並且
- ②智(ñāṇa):知識變得敏銳。無常和道支(無常/道)不斷生起,沒有煩惱介入它們之間。瑜伽士將其敏銳度視為道智,並停止修行。如果有任何光發出,不要注意它,繼續觀照無常。如果知識變得敏銳,不要停在那裡,繼續觀照無常。
- ③喜(Pīti):喜可以生起。身體感覺輕盈,似乎向上移動。
- ④輕安(Passaddhi):身心變得輕安。
- ⑤樂(Sukha):身心感到快樂。

在看到有為無常之後,感到快樂。如果是涅槃,就不應該看到無常。由於瑜伽士的性格,生起了不同種類的偽造的法(有 10 種)。如果您仍然看到無常,請不要停在那裡。您可以將其判斷為偽造的法。在真正的道智和內觀智的位置上,它會介入阳礙。

在它們中的五個(即上述5個)中,瑜伽士將會遇到其中之一。遇到之後,必 須克服它,不應該停在那裡。無常的厭離和無常的止息必須依次生起。如果您 沒有遇到它們,修行尚未發展。遇到之後,停在那裡是一個巨大的損失。如果您可以克服它,那就走在正確的道路上。

如果其中之一生起,這意味著一個具有三善根(tihetuka)的人(生來沒有貪、沒有瞋、沒有癡)。如果在此生中精進修行,將證悟涅槃。如果是一個具有雙善人以相談的人,它不會為他生起。但透過修行,在此生中只圓滿波羅蜜。

佛陀告訴我們,在獲得修行的知識之後,進行了觀照[在ñāta pariññā(知遍知)之後和進行tīrāṇa pariññā(度遍知)]:在獲得知識的開始,在修行的中間,以及在煩惱的捨棄的結尾。我們必須以這種方式進行。在佛陀時代,如果他要求比丘們這樣做,他們只會這樣做。

他們不會忙於其他事情。因此,他們很快就完成了修行。他們遵循一條道路, 許多人成為阿羅漢。(在 20 世紀,仍然有一些泰國森林僧侶和緬甸僧侶傳記的 證據)。戒律的增加也是比丘們做更多不善之事的因素。他們將時間浪費在不 善之事上。

因此,他們無法認知無常,或者他們的認知非常薄弱。這五點(從①光到⑤樂)來自觀照心(ñāṇa 或 ārammaṇika)的一方,以做出結論。現在我將從對象(ārammaṇa)的一方做出結論。

如果您看到光(即對象),您必須做出結論,它只是內觀智(即不是道智)。 仍然看到有為現象(saṅkhata)是內觀智。看到無為(asaṅkhata)是道智(沒有 五蘊的對象)。

這裡用知識(ñāṇa)做出結論:如果您仍然看到第二部分(即緣起過程中的五蘊)的無常,您必須做出結論,它永遠不是涅槃。

因此,所見的知識不是道智。只有第二部分全部止息才是涅槃和道智。內觀智看到苦諦,道智看到苦滅,兩者都是正見。

這些是正確的修行系列。第二部分觀照第二部分成為當下(即行蘊觀照行蘊)。在《彌蘭王問經》(Milinda Pañha)中,那先尊者(Ven. Nāgasena)對彌蘭王說:「從看到無常,心(ñāṇa)轉向無無常,即是涅槃。」無常保持原樣,但心(ñāṇa)轉向無無常。

[最後的話簡單明瞭,但對於理解來說卻很深刻。在心(ñāṇa)傾向於涅槃元素時,五蘊仍然存在。因此,無常仍然存在。但是心(ñāṇa)不會停留在無常,而是轉向無無常或無五蘊;傾向於無五蘊。]

T2

偽造的法是敵人。偽造的法生起,真實的法消失。並非所有這些都會在瑜伽士 中生起。其中之一肯定會生起。

⑥勝解(Adhimokkha)(一些老師將其用作信(saddhā)。在烏邦尼亞南達尊者(Sayadaw U Puññananda)的開示中,他將其用作信。

在很好地看到無常之後,對三寶——佛、法、僧的信增加。全身涼爽快樂。快樂來自信,並掩蓋了無常的對象。無常消失,將其視為證悟)。

認知全身的無常,它們之間沒有針的空隙。然後瑜伽士做出結論,認為是道智, 煩惱介入。一些瑜伽士的煩惱在臨終時生起。在內觀修行期間,它不會生起。

臨終時,看到錯誤的心靈徵兆(nimitta),並努力嘗試,有些人克服了它。有些人遇到痛苦(帶著錯誤的心靈徵兆死去)。如果事先知道,瑜伽士可以克服它。

(對於這一點,尊者講述了闡陀尊者(Ven. Channa)的故事,他病得很重。後來自殺,看到了轉世的錯誤形象。但他之前在他的修行中取得了一些成功,並可以在臨終時糾正他的心靈形象。)

有些人將昏沉和睡眠視為定,看不到無常,認為是道智。佛陀教導了四十五年。 將它們分為三個時期,每個時期十五年。在前十五年中,許多人透過神通 (abhiññā)成為阿羅漢。

(有六種神通:①各種神通 ②天耳通 ③他心通 ④宿命通 ⑤天眼通 ⑥漏盡通。)

之後是三明阿羅漢。之後,成為聖者的人越來越少。如今情況更糟。(三明指的是①宿命通②天眼通③漏盡通)

- ⑦精進(paggaha 或 viriya);四種精進清晰地生起,它不像以前的精進。瑜伽士認為它是道智。
- ⑧正念(Sati):任何時候,正念都可以追隨對象。非常敏銳的正念,並將其 視為道智的正念。

如果您用對象做出結論,就不會被誤認;仍然有無常的對象,尚未結束。

⑨觀照的平等心(Āvajana)(尊者在這裡使用這個詞,而不是捨(upekkhā) ——平等心)。這裡是捨。瑜伽士在每次觀照中都很好地認知無常,並將其視 為道智。

⑩貪著(Nikanti):它是執著的渴愛;執著於上述所有經驗。觀照其無常,並 回到自己的禪修對象(例如,透過心的觀照,回到心,透過感受,回到感受等 等)。

總而言之,這些是佛陀教法消失的原因(這裡指的是修行佛陀教法)。這些是證悟 = pativedha 佛陀教法消失的原因,因為它阻礙了道智和果智。

您必須觀照生起的偽造的法的無常。或者不要注意它們,忽略它們。在所有十點中,只有其中之一會在瑜伽士中生起。

Rely on Dhamma, Not Outside Power

7th October 1962

From many past lives, we had done many wholesome and unwholesome kammas. These two wholesome and unwholesome dogs are following us and the unwholesome dog is much stronger. Unwholesome minds are more prominent if we observe mind process of every day. With kamma used up and living beings die means killed by unwholesome dhamma.

There are many wholesome and unwholesome kammas exist in everyone. Therefore, instead of saying two dogs are following us, it's more true to say that a pack of dogs following us. If we think it's safe, then we are very foolish. Therefore, we have to walk on the way of freedom from dogs and will arrive to the place of Nibbāna free from dogs.

In regard to this, I'll tell a story. [Sayadaw told about the story of Subrahmā Devata and his 1,000 celestial nymphs. The Buddha couldn't save them directly by preventing them from falling into Hell.] Only the Dhamma can save us (This point is different from some other Buddhists who rely on the outside power. Buddha and enlightened beings are not saviours. They only show the way to safety.).

And then Sayadaw talked on practice. In front is impermanent dhamma. The seeing ñāṇa behind is also dhamma (anicca/magga). It can only save you if you can practice and know the Dhamma. There are no other reliable things except the Dhamma. (i.e., outside powers, instead we have to develop inside power).

All your bones were piling up to 13 miles of height, between two Buddhas because you all had died from being bitten by dogs. Except with the practice of maggan (Noble Eightfold Path), there is no other real refuge.

[Subrahmā Devata's story told us some important insight on the working of kammas. Because of craving for sensual pleasure and becoming (kāma taṇhā and

bhāva taṇhā), most Buddhists rely on doing wholesome kammas for the round of existence.

But what they don't know is taṇhā is like a drop of honey on the edge of a razor blade. So we always have to remember the warning of the last words of the Buddha—not living our lives with negligence.]

應依靠佛法,而非外在力量

1962年10月7日

從無數過去世以來,我們曾造作過無數善與不善的業。 這兩種「善狗」與「惡狗」便如影隨形地緊追著我們, 而其中「不善狗」的力量更為強大。

若觀察每日的「心流」,便會發現:

不善心佔了絕大多數。

當業力消耗完畢,眾生便以死結束此生,

這就等同是被「惡法所殺」。

每個人內心中,都存在著無量的善業與不善業。 因此,與其說是兩隻狗在跟著我們, 不如說是**一整群狗**正在尾隨不捨。

若你以為自己很安全, 那便是愚癡的表現。

我們必須走一條能從狗群中脫身的路, 那便是**涅槃之路——無狗之境**。

針對此事,我將講一個故事:

尊者講述了《蘇婆羅天子經》的故事—— 蘇婆羅(Subrahmā Devatā)與他的千位天女皆墮入地獄, 即便佛陀出現,**也無法以神通阻止他們的墮落**。 由此可知,唯有「法」(Dhamma)能救人。

(這點與某些宗教「依靠外在救贖」的信念截然不同。)

佛陀與諸佛已證解脫,

但他們並非救主(saviours),

而是「指路者」——示導正道,令眾生自依止、得解脫。

接著,尊者談到修行:

在你面前的,是無常之法(anicca dhamma);

在你後方觀照的,是「見智」(ñāṇa),

這見智也是「法」(即:無常/道支 = anicca / magga)。

唯有你**實修並親知佛法**,它才能救你脫離苦海。

除此之外,世間無有任何可靠的依靠。

(意即:不能依靠外力,必須開發內在的力量。)

你過去生中的骨頭,若堆積起來,高可達十三英里, 這是你在兩位佛陀之間,被「狗咬而死」的證據。 (比喻業報輪迴的苦海。)

除了修行「**八聖道**」(*magga*), 沒有其他真正的「皈依處」。

蘇婆羅天子的故事,帶給我們幾個重要省思:

人們因為貪戀**欲樂(kāma-taṇhā)與有情的存在(bhāva-taṇhā)**,即使是佛教徒,仍往往只是**造善業以求來世**,不知脫離輪迴之道。

但他們不知道——

「貪愛」就像塗著蜜糖的剃刀鋒,

看似甘甜,卻致命深刻。

因此,我們應常記住佛陀的遺言:

「切勿放逸而活。」(Appamādena sampādetha)

這一開示強調的是:

即使佛陀親臨,亦無法改變你的業報,

只有你自身的修行、覺知與正見,

才能令你走上從輪迴中解脫的真實道路。

依靠佛法,而非外力

1962年10月7日

從許多過去的生命中,我們做了許多善業和惡業。這兩隻善惡之犬跟隨著我們, 而且惡犬更加強大。如果我們觀察每天的心理過程,不善的心更加突出。隨著 業力的耗盡,眾生死去意味著被不善的法所殺。

每個人的身上都存在著許多善業和惡業。因此,與其說兩隻狗跟隨著我們,不 如說一群狗跟隨著我們更為真實。如果我們認為它是安全的,那麼我們是非常 愚蠢的。因此,我們必須走在擺脫狗的道路上,並到達沒有狗的涅槃之地。

關於這一點,我將講一個故事。[尊者講述了須婆梵天(Subrahmā Devata)和他的 1000 位天女的故事。佛陀無法直接拯救他們,阻止他們墮入地獄。]只有佛法才能拯救我們(這一點與一些依靠外力的佛教徒不同。佛陀和覺悟的眾生不是救世主。他們只是指引通往安全的道路。)。

然後尊者談到了修行。前面是無常的法。後面的認知智(無常/道)也是法。只有當您能夠修行和了解佛法時,它才能拯救您。除了佛法之外,沒有其他可靠的東西。(即外力,相反,我們必須發展內在的力量)。

你們所有的骨頭都堆積到 13 英里高,在兩位佛陀之間,因為你們都被狗咬死了。 除了八正道的修行之外,沒有其他真正的庇護所。

[須婆梵天的故事告訴我們一些關於業力運作的重要見解。由於對感官快樂和存在的渴望(欲愛和有愛),大多數佛教徒都依靠造作善業來輪迴。

但他們不知道的是,渴愛就像剃刀邊緣的一滴蜂蜜。因此,我們必須始終記住 佛陀最後的警告——不要在放逸中生活。]

The Murderers

8th October 1962

The most fearful thing for living beings is dying. Even though fear of it, they are buying the khandhas with dāna and sīla. They don't know the death of the khandha is dukkha sacca—truth of dukkha—maraṇampi dukkha saccam.

Therefore, they are asking for future khandha by prayers and vows. How quite a difficult lunatic they are! Their fear of dying is fear with not knowing; in reality, not knowing that they are dying all the times. They are fearful of the death of after dying and carrying away by other people (conventional death which they can't see by themselves).

But they don't fear of the death which can be seen by themselves (i.e., rise and fall of khandhas) because they can't see it. (It only can be seen with vipassanā practice). Ven. Rādha asked the Buddha, "What is death?" The five khandhas are King of the Death—the five murderers.

Therefore, you will be killed by whatever khandha you get. You don't know the truth of death (sacca ñāṇa) and the oppressive function of the khandhas (kicca ñāṇa) that people do make prayers and vows to get them. It's like the mouse is running towards the cat.

We have to kill them back with knowledge. But not doing things for them to kill us. It's too foolish. We are not free from the present death yet. And then looking for the next death again is very deep foolishness. We have to kill him first or will be killed by him. These were coming from this Pali passages (Khandhavagga Saṃyutta).

If we can contemplate the mind/ body become cessation and it's killed by us. That every day I talk in different ways means there are many things you don't know. Changing your days around with practice is waiting for death to kill us. U Mya had already prepared the sleeping bag to come here.

He couldn't make it because death came early. Death was staying with him. I was staying at distance. Death always exists within us. It's still not killing you yet. (Note: Henzada U Mya was a well-known and successful business man in Burma. He was well-known by many.

Sayadaw met him in Rangoon (Yan-gon) a month before this talk. And Sayadaw was urging him for the practice. His reply was he couldn't die yet. When he wanted to come, he couldn't make it.)

Contemplation of impermanence is killing the murderers. Every time seeing the five khandhas, contemplate as murderers and dukkha sacca. In the Rādha Sutta (SN.22.71 Rādhasuttaṃ), the Buddha asked us to do this even when the killer is holding his knife on our neck.

But if you are still indulging in pleasure with wife, children and wealth, you are really blind and crazy. Whatever is arising, contemplate as dukkha sacca. The Buddha taught in different ways for contemplation. If condense all of them, only dukkha sacca.

(This is a very important point in the Buddha's Teaching. He always emphasized on knowing dukkha and ending dukkha.)

It will kill the person who has affection with it. It's like a cobra kills its master. If you see the khandha as King of the Death, you are seeing rightly—Sammāpattam. Ven. Rādha continued to ask, "What's the benefit of seeing in this way?" Every time seeing in this way, the knowledge of disenchantment (not wanting to see) will arise—sammāpattam nibbidāti.

Seeing the King of the Death is yathābhūta ñāṇa—knowledge of seeing things as it really is. And disenchantment is nibbidā ñāṇa. At here, The Buddha also taught about the process of insight knowledge. Therefore, don't desire any khandha in the 31 realms of existences. I am warning you not to pray and vow for the khandha existence.

It is wrong that teachers teach people for life enrichments. And those who follow them are also wrong. It's quite worse and terrible. Taking them as friends is wrong. And taking them as murderer is right. Ven. Rādha continued to ask again, "What's the benefit of disenchantment?" With disenchantment, free from lust/attachment (rāga) and without affection; after that, followed with the Path Knowledge.

"What's the benefit of free from rāga?" The answer was getting the fruition knowledge. Fruition knowledge is totally not mixing with kilesa. Path Knowledge is like pouring water on the burning red charcoal and becomes extinguished. But don't go and touch it. Heat is still there. Fruition Knowledge is like pouring more water on the black charcoal and totally cool it down.

Ven. Rādha asked, "What's the benefit of Fruition Knowledge?" The Buddha answered, "Arriving at Nibbāna." Ven. Rādha asked again, "What's the benefit of arriving at Nibbāna?" The Buddha answered, "You don't need to ask this question. No more questions!" This is the ending of the path. Fruition Knowledge comes by itself. You don't need to do for it.

(Some scholars have the opinion that to get fruition knowledge has to wait for sometimes. Yogis' experiences are different. It has to be developed to become an adept. It is like the Jhāna attainers.)

以下是莫哥尊者於 1962 年 10 月 8 日開示的《**殺人兇手(The Murderers)**》繁體中文專業翻譯·內容深入揭示五蘊即是殺人者、死的真相、觀無常為殺兇手之道·並開示從厭離至涅槃的正道流程:

殺人兇手

1962年10月8日

對一切眾生而言,最令人恐懼的事情就是「死亡」。 然而,即便如此懼怕死亡,他們仍以佈施與持戒去「購買」色身五蘊。 他們不知道,**色身的死亡即是苦諦**(dukkha sacca)——「死亡即是苦」(maraṇaṃpi dukkha saccaṃ)。

因此,他們向未來祈願、發願得再生之身——

簡直像是執著求死的癲狂之人。

人們之所以怕死,是因為「不知而怖」。

其實他們不知道自己其實時時刻刻都在死。

他們懼怕的是「死後被人抬走」那種傳統觀念上的死亡(俗諦之死),那種自己看不到的死。

但他們卻不怕那些能自己見到的死亡——

即五蘊剎那生滅的現象,因為他們看不到它(非修觀者無法知見)。

尊者引用《羅陀經》(Rādhasutta):

尊者羅陀問佛陀:「什麼是死亡?」

佛陀回答說:

五蘊就是死亡之王,是殺人兇手。

因此,無論你得到哪一種色身(五蘊),終將被其所殺。

人們因不知「死的真相」(sacca ñāṇa),

不知五蘊的壓迫功能(kicca ñāṇa),

竟然還向它祈願、祈求!

這就像老鼠自己奔向貓的口中。

我們應以智慧來反殺它們,

而不是去做讓它來殺我們的事。 這實在太愚癡了。

我們現下尚未脫離當前這場「死亡」, 卻還一再為下一場「死亡」做準備——

這是極深的癡愚。

所以,我們應當先將「它」殺死,否則終將被它所殺。

這些內容皆出自《五蘊相應部》(Khandhavagga Samyutta)。

若我們能觀照「名色法的止息」,便是我們將它「殺掉」的時刻。

我每日以不同角度來講解, 意味著你們還有很多尚未明白的地方。 若只是任由日子過去,等死來找你, 那你就只是坐等被殺而已。

以觀行轉變生命的流轉,才是應行之道。

例如:U Mya 居士早已準備好睡袋,計畫來此聽法修行, 但他來不及了——因為死神提早降臨。 死亡早已隨侍在他身旁。 而我(尊者)卻還活著。

死亡其實一直存在於我們之中, 只是暫時還未動手而已。

觀無常,即是殺死這個兇手。

每當你見到五蘊,便應觀為殺人者、觀為苦諦。 在《羅陀經》中,佛陀教導我們: 即便殺手將刀架在你的脖子上,也要這樣觀。

但若你仍沉溺於妻子、兒女、財富的樂趣中, 那你真的是瞎眼且發瘋了。

凡所生起者,皆應觀為苦諦(dukkha sacca)。 佛陀教導我們以種種方式修觀, 但若總結起來,無非就是觀苦諦而已。

(這一點是佛陀教法的核心:認知苦、止息苦。)

這個五蘊會殺死對它有愛著的人,就像一條毒蛇會殺死它的飼主。

若你見五蘊為「死亡之王」, 你就是「正見者」(sammāpattam)。

羅陀尊者又問佛陀:「如此見有何利益?」

佛答:「每次這樣觀時,就會生起『厭離智』(nibbidā ñāṇa)——即不想再看見的智慧。」

見「死亡之王」即是「如實知見」(yathābhūta ñāṇa),「不欲再見」即是「厭離智」。

佛陀在此也闡明了觀智的流程。

因此,我勸誡你們:

莫再祈求三十一界中任何一種色身(五蘊)。

我再說一次:

向來世祈願色身,是錯誤的。

那些教人「為了豐盛人生而修行」的老師,是錯的; 那些跟隨他們的人,也是在錯誤中。

這樣的行為,其實比想像中更可怕、更危險。 把這些「五蘊」當作朋友,是錯的; 把它們當作兇手,才是正確的!

羅陀尊者再問:「見厭離有何利益?」

佛答:「厭離能斷除貪著(rāga),不再愛著; 接著便可證得『道智』(magga ñāṇa)。」 「那斷除愛著之利益為何?」

佛言:「得證『果智』(phala ñāṇa)——即完全不染煩惱的心。」

「道智」就像將水潑在紅熱的炭火上——火熄,但尚有餘熱,不要去觸碰。

「果智」則像再潑一層水在黑炭上——完全涼透。

羅陀尊者再問:「得果智有何利益?」

佛言:「得涅槃。」

再問:「得涅槃有何利益?」

佛陀說:「此後無須再問!」

這是修行的終點。

果智乃自然而生,無需額外造作。

(註:有些學者認為證得「果智」需等待時機,

但不同行者的經驗不同。

它需逐步修熟,猶如修得「禪那」一般。)

殺手

1962年10月8日

對於眾生來說,最可怕的事情是死亡。儘管害怕它,他們還是透過布施和持戒來購買五蘊。他們不知道五蘊的死亡是苦諦——苦之真諦——maraṇampi dukkha saccam。

因此,他們透過祈禱和誓願來請求未來的五蘊。他們是多麼困難的瘋子啊!他們對死亡的恐懼是不了解的恐懼;實際上,他們不知道自己一直在死亡。他們害怕死後的死亡,以及被其他人帶走(他們自己看不到的世俗死亡)。

但是他們並不害怕自己可以看到的死亡(即五蘊的生滅),因為他們看不到它。 (它只能透過內觀修行看到)。羅陀尊者(Ven. Rādha)問佛陀:「什麼是死亡?」五蘊是死亡之王——五個殺手。

因此,無論您獲得什麼五蘊,都會被它殺死。您不知道死亡的真相(sacca ñāṇa)和五蘊的壓迫功能(kicca ñāṇa),人們因此祈禱和誓願獲得它們。這就像老鼠跑向貓一樣。

我們必須用知識反擊它們。而不是做一些讓它們殺死我們的事情。這太愚蠢了。 我們還沒有從現在的死亡中解脫出來。然後再次尋找下一次的死亡是非常深的 愚蠢。我們必須先殺死它,否則會被它殺死。這些都來自巴利文的這些段落 (Khandhavagga Saṃyutta)。

如果我們可以觀照身心變成止息,那就是我們殺死了它。我每天用不同的方式 講述,意味著有很多您不知道的事情。用修行來改變您的日子,就是在等待死 亡來殺死我們。吳妙(U Mya)已經準備好睡袋來這裡了。

他沒能來,因為死亡來得太早。死亡一直與他同在。我則保持距離。死亡總是 存在於我們之中。它還沒有殺死您。(註:亨札達吳妙是緬甸一位著名的成功 商人。他為眾人所熟知。

尊者在這個開示前一個月在仰光(Yangon)見到他。尊者敦促他修行。他的回答是他還不能死。當他想來時,他沒能來。)

觀照無常就是殺死殺手。每次看到五蘊,都觀照它們為殺手和苦諦。在《羅陀經》(SN.22.71 Rādhasuttaṃ)中,佛陀要求我們即使在殺手拿著刀架在我們脖子上時也要這樣做。

但是,如果您仍然沉迷於妻子、孩子和財富的快樂中,您真的是盲目和瘋狂的。 無論生起什麼,都觀照它為苦諦。佛陀用不同的方式教導觀照。如果將它們全 部濃縮,只有苦諦。

(這是佛陀教導中非常重要的一點。他總是強調了解苦和結束苦。)

它會殺死對它有愛的人。這就像一條眼鏡蛇殺死它的主人。如果您將五蘊視為死亡之王,您就是正確地看待——Sammāpattam。羅陀尊者繼續問:「以這種

方式看待有什麼好處?」每次以這種方式看待,厭離的知識(不想要看到)就會生起——sammāpattam nibbidāti。

看到死亡之王是如實知——yathābhūta ñāṇa。厭離是厭離智——nibbidā ñāṇa。 在這裡,佛陀還教導了內觀智的過程。因此,不要渴望三十一有中的任何五蘊。 我警告您不要為五蘊的存在祈禱和發誓。

老師教導人們追求生活富足是錯誤的。而那些追隨他們的人也是錯誤的。這非常糟糕和可怕。將它們視為朋友是錯誤的。將它們視為殺手是正確的。羅陀尊者繼續再次問:「厭離有什麼好處?」有了厭離,就能從貪欲/執著(rāga)中解脫出來,沒有愛;之後,隨之而來的是道智。

「從貪欲中解脫出來有什麼好處?」答案是獲得果智。果智完全不與煩惱混合。 道智就像在燃燒的紅炭上倒水並熄滅。但不要去碰它。熱量仍然存在。果智就 像在黑炭上倒更多的水,完全冷卻它。

羅陀尊者問:「果智有什麼好處?」佛陀回答:「到達涅槃。」羅陀尊者再次問:「到達涅槃有什麼好處?」佛陀回答:「您不需要問這個問題。沒有更多的問題!」這是道路的終點。果智會自行到來。您不需要為它做任何事情。

(一些學者認為,獲得果智必須等待一段時間。瑜伽士的經驗各不相同。它必 須發展成為一個熟練的人。這就像禪定成就者一樣。)

Fall in Love with Dukkha

9th October 1962

Instant rebirth—upapatti-bhāva in sec ④ is the rebirth of instantly arising of the heavenly beings, brahma gods and hell beings (refer to twelve links of D. A.). Rebirth doesn't mean following from this life to that life. It's conditioned by the power of kammas. Saying it as rebirth, in real it's like from consciousness to feeling (i.e., viññāna ...vedanā) in sec ②.

Ageing and death are also the same (i.e., as a khandha). Knowing that we'll die and happy with sensual pleasure is crazy. It's taking pleasure in dukkha sacca. Arriving to Nibbāna means no kamma exists. But you all are expecting for good kamma, expecting for samudaya and dukkha saccas. You love dukkha. Take dukkha as sukha.

In the four Noble Truths, dukkha sacca is the most difficult to know. If you know it, you'll free from dukkha. Now you know dukkha as the animal does. You all are bored without dukkha. When someone dies, people cry because they lost their dukkha. In real they are crying because their burden is falling off.

Dukkha is the most difficult to understand. With the understanding of dukkha sacca, everything finished. It could not arrive to Nirodha—the Cessation of Dukkha without understanding of dukkha.

So Nibbāna is not the kammic way but ñāṇaic way. Only with the knowledge of understanding dukkha arises, Nibbāna will appear. Now people are crying if loosing dukkha. (Sayadaw gave other examples in life but the sound of the tape was not clear enough.)

If I am asking you for practice, you don't want to do it because you are in fear of dukkha ending. People are working hard for kilesa matters leading to dukkha. More and more people don't know about dukkha and more appreciate kamma.

Whatever kinds of kamma you are doing only get birth—jāti. And only get dukkha sacca. Wanting to abandon kamma is quite rare. Connecting to kammas means we like dukkha, not wanting short life. Longer life means longer dukkha.

Someone who doesn't know dukkha is expecting kamma. People appreciate samudaya sacca (i.e., taṇhā) which has to be abandoned means dukkha sacca is difficult to understand. This is an evidence about it.

以下是莫哥尊者於 1962 年 10 月 9 日開示的《**愛上苦(Fall in Love with Dukkha)》**之繁體中文專業翻譯,講述眾生如何顛倒愛著苦,錯解業報與生死,並闡明「苦諦」是通往涅槃的核心關鍵:

愛上苦

1962年10月9日

所謂的「即生即有」($upapatti-bh\bar{a}va$),即十二緣起中第四支的「生有」(sec ④),

指的是諸天、有色界與地獄眾生的剎那再生。

「再生」並非指從此世延續至彼世,

而是由業力所成的即刻存在。

所謂「再生」這詞,只是世俗用語。

實際上,它就如第二支中從識(viññāṇa)生起受(vedanā)一般,亦即一種心的流轉現象。

「老死」也是一樣——是「蘊」的問題。

若明知終將死去,卻仍沉醉於感官樂中,

這實在是癡迷之極。

這種行為是:將苦諦當作樂來享受。

抵達涅槃之意,即是業已止息、無有業果再現。

但你們卻期待未來得好業, 這就是渴求集諦與苦諦, 等於是「愛著苦」。 把苦當成樂。

在四聖諦中, 苦諦最難理解。

唯有真正了解苦諦,才能從苦中解脫。

如今你們所謂的「知道苦」, 就如動物知道痛一般膚淺。 你們會因為「沒有苦」而感到無聊。

例如有人死了,眾人哭泣, 其實是在哀嘆「失去了苦」—— 他們並未察覺,所謂的「重擔」其實已經卸下, 卻仍為之悲傷。

苦是最難了解的真理。

若能真實了解苦諦,一切修道便可圓滿。 不了解苦,就無法通達滅諦(涅槃)。 底以,理整不見「業」之遊、兩見「報」之遊(答ānia waw)

所以,涅槃不是「業」之道,而是「智」之道(ñāṇic way)。

唯有對「苦」產生正確理解,

涅槃才會出現。

而現在的人們,卻在「失去苦」時流淚不已。

(此處尊者舉了幾個生活中例子,但錄音聲音不清晰。)

若我勸你們實修, 你們往往提不起願力, 因為你們「害怕苦會結束」! 眾生每天都勤奮忙於「煩惱」之事, 這些正是導向苦的事情。 世人越來越不了解「苦」的真相, 卻越來越欣賞、貪愛「業」。

無論你造作何種業, 所招感的,無非是**生(jāti)**—— 也就是**苦諦**。

欲捨業者,極其稀有。 與業相連,就表示**我們愛著苦**, 不願短命,渴望長壽—— 其實是渴望更長久的苦。

不了解苦的人,一定期待業報。

世人對「集諦」(taṇhā)讚嘆不已, 而集諦正是佛所教導要斷除之法。 這就是證據,顯示「苦諦」確實難以理解。

此開示揭示佛法修行的根本顛倒—— 眾生不只未觀察苦,反而愛上苦, 將欲樂、輪迴、業報當作可欲之物, 不知這一切皆為苦因。

尊者一語道破:若不知苦,即無由知滅;不知滅,則不可能修道。

愛上苦

1962年10月9日

第四部分的瞬間再生——upapatti-bhāva 是指天人、梵天和地獄眾生的瞬間再生(參見緣起的十二個環節)。再生並不意味著從這一生到那一生的延續。它是由業力的力量所制約的。說它是再生,實際上就像第二部分中的從識到受(即viññāṇa...vedanā)。

衰老和死亡也是一樣(即作為五蘊)。知道我們會死,卻還樂於感官快樂,這 是瘋狂的。這是在苦諦中取樂。到達涅槃意味著沒有業存在。但你們都在期待 善業,期待集諦和苦諦。你們愛苦。將苦視為樂。

在四聖諦中,苦諦是最難了解的。如果您了解它,您將從苦中解脫出來。現在您像動物一樣了解苦。沒有苦,你們都會感到無聊。當有人去世時,人們哭泣是因為他們失去了他們的苦。實際上,他們哭泣是因為他們的負擔落下了。

苦是最難理解的。理解苦諦,一切都結束了。不理解苦,就無法到達滅諦—— 苦的止息。

因此,涅槃不是業力之道,而是智力之道。只有當了解苦的知識生起時,涅槃才會出現。現在人們在失去苦時哭泣。(尊者舉了生活中其他例子,但錄音帶的聲音不夠清晰。)

如果我要求你們修行,你們不想做,因為你們害怕苦的結束。人們努力工作於導致苦的煩惱之事。越來越多的人不了解苦,越來越多的人欣賞業。

無論你們做什麼樣的業,只會得到出生——jāti。只會得到苦諦。想要放棄業是 非常罕見的。連接到業意味著我們喜歡苦,不想要短暫的生命。更長的生命意 味著更長的苦。

不了解苦的人期待業。人們欣賞必須被放棄的集諦(即渴愛),這意味著苦諦很難理解。這就是一個證據。

Why Become Living Beings?

9th October 1962

It need to ask the question; "Why become human and heavenly beings." If living beings exist, ageing, sickness and death exist. If living beings don't exist, ageing, sickness and death don't exist. Craving to sense objects (ārammaṇa) and become living beings. Become living beings and ageing, sickness and death arise.

Therefore, the beginning of living beings is not knowing (avijjā) and craving (taṇhā). The culprits constructing living beings are ignorance and craving. With the causes of avijjā and taṇhā, the result of living beings comes into existence. (Continued to talk the story of Ven. Rādha)

Ven. Rādha asked the Buddha, "Why is it called living beings?" The Buddha answered, "Craving to all the five khandhas is called living being." After getting the five khandhas, craving arises. And then do the causes for the five khandhas again. In this way the machine of samudaya and dukkha is turning on and on. If you are taking off the craving, living being will disappear. Therefore, the Buddha taught vipassanā dhamma.

The Buddha asked Ven. Rādha to discern the impermanence of each of the five khandhas. Arising and passing away is dukkha sacca. Knowing it is magga sacca. In this way taṇhā in sec ③ is cut off. The nature of the khandha is always disintegrating and perishing. Seeing of this is the view of the path factors—right view. If not seeing it, then samudaya and dukkha are revolving.

A grown-up person is more foolish than a child because man and woman can't throw things away. A child attaches to his or her things only in short time. Craving on whatever seeing is called living being, i.e., on oneself, others, and possessions; and after, born attached to any place (i.e., round of existence)

Avijjā and taṇhā are like the axle of a wheel cart. Khandha is the body of the cart. It's like the cart is moving around with the turning of the axle. Therefore, you

can't move what you like. You arrive to human world, heavenly world, etc. Wherever arriving at, it will end up with ageing, sickness and death. Both of them are in the khandha and beings are suffered according to their arrangements. Don't know how to break the axle of the taints (āsavas) that living beings are in random situations.

There are four āsavas: ① attachment to wife, children, home and possessions is kāmāsava—taint of sensuality. ② Taking pleasure in this and that worlds (round of existence) is bhavāsava—taint of becoming. ③ Attachment to one's own view is diṭṭhāsava—taint of view. ④ Without knowing the four Noble Truths and wasting time is avijjāsava—taint of ignorance.

When the four wheels are moving and the body of the cart has to move with them. Kāmāsava sends beings to sensual world. And diṭṭhāsava sends being to woeful planes. Avijjāsava sends beings to 31 realms of existences. Condensing the four āsavas; ① + ② + ③ are taṇhā and ④ is avijjā (continued to talk about the contemplation of the mind).

Every time mind arises, have to contemplate and discern dukkha sacca. And have to contemplate and discern impermanence. If seeing impermanence, avijjā becomes vijjā and the axle of avijjā is broken. Without taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma does not arise. The three axles—①, ② and ③ are also broken. So only by knowing the truth, āsavas will end.

Dukkha sacca is not my teaching. It was in the Pali Text. In the khandha, only arising dukkha and vanishing dukkha exist. Therefore, it doesn't mix with any happiness (sukka) at all. Know dukkha sacca thoroughly and samudaya ceases. Also let nirodha sacca arises. So contemplate to know arising dukkha and vanishing dukkha thoroughly.

以下是莫哥尊者於 1962 年 10 月 9 日開示的《為何變成眾生(Why Become Living Beings?)》之繁體中文專業翻譯,探討眾生形成的根本原因、五蘊與愛著的關係、四漏與輪迴流轉的機制,以及如何透過觀心修行來止息這一切:

為何變成眾生

1962年10月9日

我們應該深刻地提出這個問題:

「為何我們會變成『眾生』?」

如果有「眾生」的存在, 那麼老、病、死也就存在;

若無「眾生」,則無有老、病與死。

由於對境(ārammaṇa)起貪愛,

便成為了「眾生」;

因成為眾生,便有老、病、死的生起。

因此,「眾生的起點」乃是無明(avijjā)與愛(taṇhā)。 造成眾生存在的「罪魁禍首」,正是這兩者。

在無明與愛的因之下,眾生的果報便生起了。

(尊者接著講述羅陀尊者的故事。)

羅陀尊者曾問佛陀:「何謂眾生?」

佛答:「對五蘊的貪愛,即稱為眾生。」

當你得到了五蘊之後,愛便會生起;接著又造作新的因,導致再度得五蘊。

這就如同一部機器般,

讓集諦與苦諦的輪子不停地運轉。

若你能去除對五蘊的貪愛,「眾生」這個名相便會止息。

因此,佛陀才教導我們修習**觀智(vipassanā)**。

佛陀教導羅陀尊者觀照五蘊的無常。

生滅現象即是苦諦;

對它的如實知見即是道諦。

如此一來,便能截斷十二因緣中第三支的「愛」(tanhā)。

五蘊的本性,時時刻刻都在分解、崩壞。

能見此者,即具「正見」(magga diṭṭhi)。

若無見此,集與苦便繼續輪轉不已。

成年人往往比孩童更癡愚,

因為男女皆難以放下擁有。

小孩對物品的執著只持續片刻,

但大人則對「自我、他人、財產」等,深起貪著。

這就是所謂的「眾生」——

並因此在輪迴中不斷再生於某一處所。

無明與愛,就如同牛車的車軸,

而「五蘊」則是車身。

這部車輛之所以能轉動、前行,

就是因為車軸的帶動。

所以你並不能選擇你想去的地方,

你來到人間、天界等,

但無論生在哪裡,最終都是老、病、死的結局。

老、病、死,皆在於「五蘊」之中,

而眾生便依此而受苦不已。

正因為不知道如何斷除這車軸——四漏(āsava),

眾生才會在輪迴中隨業飄盪,毫無方向。

四漏如下:

① 欲漏 (kāmāsava):

貪著妻子、子女、家庭與財物等。

② 有漏 (bhavāsava):

對「這個世界、那個世界」起樂趣與追求。

③ 見漏 (diṭṭhāsava):

對自己的見解、信念起執著。

④ 無明漏 (avijjāsava):

不知四聖諦, 虛耗光陰。

當這四個輪子一同轉動時,車身(即五蘊)也不得不隨之而轉。

欲漏將眾生送往欲界;

見漏將眾生送入惡趣;

無明漏則將眾生推入三十一界之中。

若將這四漏簡化:

① + ② + ③ 為愛 (taṇhā),

④ 則為無明 (avijjā)。

(尊者接著談到如何觀心):

每當心念升起,

便要觀其為「苦諦」;

並觀其「無常」。

若見無常,則**無明轉為明知(vijjā)**,

也就是打破了「無明這一根車軸」。

若無「愛」,則不生「取」與「業」;

這樣便同時打破了第二、第三根車軸。

因此,唯有**知見真理(四聖諦)**, 四漏才能止息。

苦諦不是我(尊者)創造出來的教法,

它就載明於《巴利三藏》中。

在五蘊中,

所存在的,只有生起的苦與滅去的苦,

根本無有任何樂(sukha)可言。

若你能透徹地知見「苦諦」,

集諦將止息,滅諦便會顯現。

因此,應觀察並通達「生起的苦」與「消逝的苦」, 直到苦之全貌徹底被照見。

這一講記深刻地指出:

只要無明與愛還在運作,

眾生之名就不會止息,

而你就無法脫離老病死的苦輪。

唯有「真見苦,真知苦」,才是真正開啟涅槃之道。

為何成為眾生?

1962年10月9日

有必要問這個問題:「為何成為人和天人?」如果眾生存在,衰老、疾病和死亡就存在。如果眾生不存在,衰老、疾病和死亡就不存在。對感官對象(ārammaṇa)的渴望,導致成為眾生。成為眾生,衰老、疾病和死亡就會生起。

因此,眾生的開始是無知(avijjā)和渴望(taṇhā)。建造眾生的罪魁禍首是無知和渴望。有了無知和渴望的原因,眾生的結果就會出現。(繼續講述羅陀尊者的故事)

羅陀尊者問佛陀:「為什麼稱之為眾生?」佛陀回答:「對所有五蘊的渴望稱為眾生。」獲得五蘊後,渴望生起。然後再次為五蘊造作原因。這樣,集諦和苦諦的機器就不斷運轉。如果去除渴望,眾生就會消失。因此,佛陀教導了內觀法。

佛陀要求羅陀尊者認知每個五蘊的無常。生起和消逝是苦諦。了解它是道諦。 這樣,第三部分的渴愛就被切斷。五蘊的本質總是在崩解和滅亡。看到這一點 是道支的觀點——正見。如果不看到它,那麼集諦和苦諦就會輪轉。

一個成年人比一個孩子更愚蠢,因為男人和女人無法丟棄東西。孩子只在短時間內依附於他的東西。對任何所見之物的渴望都稱為眾生,即對自己、他人和財產的渴望;之後,出生時依附於任何地方(即輪迴)。

無知和渴望就像車輪的輪軸。五蘊是車身。就像車輛隨著輪軸的轉動而移動一樣。因此,您無法隨心所欲地移動。您到達人間、天界等等。無論到達哪裡,最終都會以衰老、疾病和死亡告終。它們都在五蘊中,眾生根據它們的安排而受苦。不知道如何打破煩惱(āsavas)的輪軸,眾生才會處於隨機的境地。

有四種煩惱:①對妻子、孩子、家庭和財產的執著是欲漏(kāmāsava)——感官的煩惱。②在今生和來世(輪迴)中取樂是有漏(bhavāsava)——存在的煩惱。③對自己觀點的執著是見漏(diṭṭhāsava)——觀點的煩惱。④不了解四聖諦而浪費時間是無明漏(avijjāsava)——無知的煩惱。

當四個輪子移動時,車身必須隨之移動。欲漏將眾生送到感官世界。見漏將眾生送到惡趣。無明漏將眾生送到三十一有。濃縮四種煩惱;①+②+③是渴愛,④是無知(繼續談論心的觀照)。

每次心生起,都必須觀照和認知苦諦。並且必須觀照和認知無常。如果看到無常,無知就變成明,無知的輪軸就被打破。沒有渴愛,執取和業就不會生起。 三個輪軸——①、②和③也被打破。因此,只有了解真理,煩惱才會結束。

苦諦不是我的教導。它在巴利文中。在五蘊中,只有生起的苦和消失的苦存在。因此,它根本不與任何快樂(sukha)混合。徹底了解苦諦,集諦就會止息。也讓滅諦生起。因此,觀照以徹底了解生起的苦和消失的苦。

Disenchantment with the Monkey

10th October 1962

The Buddha at Sāvatthi Jetavana Monastery, contemplated on living beings. They didn't have the disenchantment to their mind and body process and not realized Path and Fruition Knowledge. Thinking of the body in one life lasting for 50, 60, 70 years is let it be.

Citta (mind), mana (mind), viññāṇa (Consciousness) are the same. Citta is the nature of knowing the objects. Mana is thinking and planning. Viññāṇa is also knowing the objects. Citta, mana, and viññāṇa are not the same one in day and night. It's good to become disenchantment of them.

It should be let it be with attaching to the body as me and mine, I am; because it's lasting for 60, 70, eighty years in one's life. But each one of the mind (seeing mind, hearing mind, greedy mind, etc.) is perishing moment to moment. It's good for disenchantment to the mind.

The Buddha said that the mind was like a monkey. Here what the Buddha wanted to say was human beings attached to the mind clinging with self-view—diṭṭhi-upādāna.

Therefore, he wanted us to contemplate on the mind (from Nidanavagga Saṃyutta, Mahavagga). People having the view of eternalism take the mind as one mind only; and have a lot of wrong views on the mind. For example, every nationality believes in a soul.

Monkey has the habit of jumping from branch to another on the tree. At last no other branches hold on to, embracing and sleeping on it. In the same way mind is at rest taking the object of the past life. (The mind at sleep is life continuum mind, bhavaṅga citta, and taking the object of past life at the moment of death.)

Therefore, it's sure that there are many different kinds of mind (The monkey hands are changing like many different kinds of mind changing. Jumping from one branch to another branch on the trees are sense objects).

Today talk is comparing the forms and the minds. And the Buddha making the conclusion that wrong view arose because beings didn't understand D. A. process. (explain the twelve links as minds are changing moment to moment by causes and effects).

And they are ended with the assemblage of dukkha. Therefore, dukkha sacca arising and dukkha sacca ceasing; i.e., impermanence is called dukkha sacca. Only by understanding D. A. process can arrive at this thought. Mind arising is dukkha arising. And mind passing away is dukkha passing away. In the real process mind can't last long even one second; arising and passing away at the speed of hundred thousand billion times /sec (per second).

It's no need to discern that much. In every second discerning them arising and passing away is enough. Their unstable and uncontrollable nature appears. For example, after death consciousness ceases, birth consciousness arises. And after it ceases, life continuum consciousness (bhavaṅga citta) arises.

Therefore, it's good to have disenchantment for it. Nibbidānto virijjāti—Dispassion comes with disenchantment. This means the Path Knowledge does not arise without the knowledge of disenchantment arises. If feeling (vedanā) arises, physical feeling (rūpa-vedanā) and mental feeling (citta-vedanā) arise.

With the cessation of feeling, physical and mental feelings cease. If craving (taṇhā) arises, craving for form (rūpa-taṇhā) and craving for mind (citta-taṇhā) arise. With the cessation of taṇhā, rūpa-taṇhā and citta-taṇhā also cease, etc. ...

In vipassanā contemplation without the D. A. process, not become right knowing. If not, with the seeing of passing away phenomenon, doubt can arise. Why is it passing away? With doubt arises and wrong view follows. Having doubt and viewing things with one's desire.

(Sayadaw explained the impermanence of the mind with an example. Writing the numbers of ①, ②, ③ on the three posts side by side. And then observing them one by one. With seeing no. ② and no. ① ceases, with seeing no. ③ and no. ② ceases).

All of them appear in the eye-sensitivity—cakkhupasāda. Then after the old one ceases, the new one arises. The numbers are evident for this point. This sutta described the importance of D. A. process. It relies on the heart base.

The objects are not the same; arising here and vanishing here. They can't be moved away from the place. Someone with the knowledge becomes disenchantment. D. A. process is very important in the contemplation of vipassanā. The whole day in the khandha only dukkha arising and ceasing.

Therefore, the Buddha said that every Buddha taught dukkha arising and ceasing. So whatever arising in the khandha is dukkha arising. Sukha can't arise. From the poison tree only bear the poison fruits. Again it only has poison seeds in the poison fruit. Again it grows a poison tree from the poison seed.

It'll go like this without stopping: samudaya \rightarrow dukkha \rightarrow samudaya \rightarrow dukkha, etc. Here samudaya is the seed and dukkha is the tree. If don't get the medicine for killing the poison, tree and the seed never cut off. Therefore, the Buddha said it was like the person wanted to extinguish the fire and repeatedly put dry woods in the fire.

You all are like insects flying towards the fire as taking it gold. Craving for the gold in heavens, everyone prays for rebirth there. After arriving there, die again. Let us extract the main point. Only knowing the non-existence of the before phenomenon, become anicca, dukkha, anatta and asubha (impermanent, suffering, not-self, and loathsome).

Always watch the D. A. process of one's own khandha. In front, a D. A. dhamma arises and ñāṇa observes from behind, etc.; then it only becomes vipassanā. Paññā cuts off the dhamma connecting with saṁsāra. Don't say there are many ways on practice. It's right if you contemplate your own D. A. process.

Here U Aung Zan Way and U Tin have to remember to contemplate the paṭicca-samuppanna dhamma—the result. Contemplate the arising result dhamma. Not on the paṭicca-samuppāda—it is the cause of dhamma. Samuppanna is arising dhamma. Samuppāda is the arisen dhamma.

Therefore, you can't contemplate it. Have to remember this point carefully. Samuppanna dhamma and ñāṇa have to be in line (one after another). If not in line, it will end up with fruitless. Sometimes people are saying your mind is like a monkey mind. This is not saying with ñāṇa but with hate.

(Note: U Aung Zan Way and U Tin were politicians and became his disciples the year he passed away. Both of them were successful in their practice. Later U Tin became a monk and known as Sayadaw U Dhammasara.)

以下是莫哥尊者於 1962 年 10 月 10 日開示的《**厭離猴子心**(**Disenchantment with the Monkey**)》繁體中文專業翻譯·內容聚焦於「心」的無常、緣起與修行上的正觀,呼籲行者應厭離變異無常的識陰,而不是執取它為「我」。

厭離猴子心

1962年10月10日

佛陀住於舍衛城祇樹給孤獨園時,觀照眾生的心相,見眾生對自己的「色身與心」不起厭離,故未能證得道果智。

佛陀思惟:若只是將「一生的身體」看作能維持五、六、七十年,這樣的執取 也就罷了;

但眾生連那剎那剎那變異的心也視為「我、我所」,這才更應該起厭離心。

巴利經典中提到三種「心」的術語:

• citta:指認識所緣的心本身;

• mano: 指思惟與策劃的功能;

• viññāṇa:也是指認識所緣的識。

這三者在白天與夜晚都不相同、持續變化,

因此,若對「心」不能起厭離,是極大的愚癡。

對身體起「我、我所」的執取,或許因它可維持數十年而情有可原;

但「心」如見心、聞心、貪心等,都是一剎那即滅的,

因此,更應對它生起厭離(nibbidā)。

佛陀說:「心就如猴子。」

這是因為眾生將「心」執取為我見(diţţhi-upādāna)所致。

因此佛陀教導我們應觀「心」之無常。

(出自《相應部・因緣品・大品》)

有永恆論(sassata-diṭṭhi)的人認為「心只有一個」,

這是一種錯誤見解。

例如,幾乎每一種宗教、民族都相信有「靈魂」。

猴子的習性是:

在樹枝間跳躍不止,最後實在沒地方可去時,

才擁抱著某個枝幹入眠。

同樣地,「心」在無數對境之間流轉不止,

最後在死亡之時,轉入取生識(bhavanga citta),

而「抱著」的是過去業的所緣。

因此,「心」就如一隻不停變動的猴子,對境則如樹枝一般。

本講記旨在比較「色法與心法」的特性,

佛陀指出,**錯見**之所以生起,是因眾生不懂十二緣起法。

這一切的現象,終結於「苦蘊的聚集(dukkha-khandha)」。

因此,**苦的生起與苦的滅盡,便是無常的展現**,這稱為苦諦。 唯有通達緣起法,才能明白這一點:

「心的生起即是苦的生起,心的滅去即是苦的滅盡。」

實際上,心連一秒都無法維持穩定,它以每秒數十萬億次的速度生滅變異。

但我們無須觀得如此細緻, 只要能在一秒內覺知其「生滅現象」, 無常與不可控的本質便會顯現出來。

例如,死識(cuti citta)滅去後,生識(paṭisandhi citta)便會生起,接著又轉為有分識(bhavaṅga citta)。

因此,我們應該對心起「厭離心」:

nibbidanto virijjāti —— 厭離生出離。

若無厭離智的生起,道智便無法出現。

若感受(vedanā)生起,則有「身受」與「心受」。 當感受滅去時,兩者亦皆滅去。

若貪愛(taṇhā)生起,則有「對色法的貪愛」與「對心法的貪愛」。 當貪愛滅盡,這兩種也皆滅盡。

若不以緣起法作觀,修觀便不成正知(sammā-ñāṇa)。

否則,當你見到法的滅去,反而會生起懷疑: 「為何這些會滅呢?」

懷疑生起時,邪見便隨之而來, 觀法者便陷入「如我所欲」的執取。

(尊者以一個譬喻來說明心的無常現象)

好比把①②③三個數字寫在並排的三根柱子上, 當你觀見②時,①便不見了; 觀見③時,②便滅去。

這些變化都發生在眼根處(cakkhupasāda), 舊者滅,新者生, 數字的現象正可作為此理的證明。

此部經(指猴子的譬喻)正說明了**緣起法在修觀中的重要性。整日的五蘊,不斷是在「苦的生起與滅盡」之中。**

因此, 佛陀說:

「過去、現在、未來的一切佛陀, 都是教導『苦的生起與苦的滅盡』。」

凡是在五蘊中生起的一切現象,皆是「苦的生起」。 樂(sukha)是無法從其中出現的。

從毒樹中只能長出毒果; 而毒果中也只含有毒種子; 毒種又會長出毒樹。

如此往復不斷:

集→苦→集→苦→…

在這裡,**集(samudaya)**是種子, **苦(dukkha)**是毒樹。

若不服下「滅除之藥」,這棵毒樹與毒種將永不斷絕。

佛陀說:

「如有人想熄滅火焰,卻不斷添上乾柴, 這是最愚癡的行為。」

你們就像飛向火焰的飛蛾, 錯將火焰當作金子。 貪戀天界之樂,於是祈願往生天界, 但到了那裡又再一次死亡。

讓我們抽出重點:

唯有認識「前一剎那的現象已不存在」這一點, 才能見「無常、苦、無我、不淨」。

應當常觀照自己五蘊的「緣起法」—— 前面是緣起生起的法(paṭicca-samuppanna dhamma), 後面則是用觀智來照見。

如此,才能成為真正的觀智(vipassanā)。

智慧(paññā)是剪斷輪迴連結的利刀。

不要說修行有許多種方法, 只要你能觀自己當下生起的「緣起法」,那就是正確之道。 尊者特別叮囑 U Aung Zan Way 與 U Tin 二人, 要記得觀「緣生法(samuppanna dhamma)」—— 也就是果法。

不是觀「緣起(samuppāda)」,那是因法,非可直接觀察。

這一點務必要牢記。

緣生法與觀智(ñāna)必須步步相隨,若不同步,修行就無結果。

有人說:「你的心像猴子一樣啊!」 這種說法若出自觀智,那是智慧; 若出自厭惡,那只是情緒與無明。

(註:UAung Zan Way 與 U Tin 為緬甸政治人物,在尊者圓寂前皈依成為弟子,二人皆在修行上有成就。後來 U Tin 出家為比丘,法號 U Dhammasāra。)

對猴子的厭離

1962年10月10日

佛陀在舍衛城祇園精舍,觀照眾生。他們對身心過程沒有厭離,也沒有證悟道智和果智。認為身體在一生中持續 50、60、70 年,就隨它去吧。

心(citta)、意(mana)、識(viññāṇa)是相同的。心是了知對象的本質。意是思考和計劃。識也是了知對象。心、意、識在白天和夜晚不是同一個。對它們產生厭離是好的。

應該隨它去,執著於身體為我和我所,我是;因為它在一生中持續 60、70、80 年。但是每一個心(見心、聽心、貪心等等)都是剎那剎那滅亡的。對心產生 厭離是好的。 佛陀說,心就像一隻猴子。這裡佛陀想要說的是,人類執著於心,執著於我見 ——邪見執取。

因此,他希望我們觀照心(來自《尼陀那品相應》、《大品》)。持有常見的人認為心只有一個;並且對心有很多錯誤的觀點。例如,每個民族都相信靈魂。

猴子有在樹上從一個樹枝跳到另一個樹枝的習慣。最後沒有其他樹枝可以抓住,它就擁抱著睡覺。同樣地,心在休息時會抓住過去生命的對象。(睡眠中的心是生命相續心,bhavanga citta,在臨終時抓住過去生命的對象。)

因此,肯定有很多不同種類的心(猴子的手在變化,就像許多不同種類的心在變化一樣。在樹上從一個樹枝跳到另一個樹枝是感官對象)。

今天的談話是比較形狀和心。佛陀的結論是,錯誤的觀點之所以產生,是因為 眾生不了解緣起過程。(解釋十二個環節,因為心隨著因果關係而剎那剎那變 化。)

它們以苦的集合結束。因此,苦諦生起,苦諦止息;即無常被稱為苦諦。只有了解緣起過程才能產生這種想法。心的生起是苦的生起。心的消逝是苦的消逝。在真實的過程中,心甚至無法持續一秒鐘;以每秒數千億次的速度生起和消逝。

不需要認知那麼多。每秒認知它們的生起和消逝就足夠了。它們不穩定和無法控制的本質顯現出來。例如,死亡意識止息後,出生意識生起。它止息後,生命相續意識(bhavaṅga citta)生起。

因此,對它產生厭離是好的。nibbidānto virijjāti——厭離伴隨著離欲。這意味著如果沒有厭離的知識,道智就不會生起。如果感受(vedanā)生起,身感受(rūpa-vedanā)和心感受(citta-vedanā)就會生起。

隨著感受的止息,身感受和心感受也會止息。如果渴愛(taṇhā)生起,對形狀的渴愛(rūpa-taṇhā)和對心的渴愛(citta-taṇhā)就會生起。隨著渴愛的止息,rūpa-taṇhā 和 citta-taṇhā 也會止息,等等……

在沒有緣起過程的內觀觀照中,不會成為正知。如果沒有,隨著看到消逝的現象,可能會產生懷疑。為什麼它會消逝?隨著懷疑的產生,錯誤的觀點隨之而來。帶著懷疑,用自己的欲望看待事物。

(尊者用一個例子解釋了心的無常。在三個並排的柱子上寫下①、②、③的數字。然後逐一觀察它們。隨著看到②號,①號止息;隨著看到③號,②號止息。)

它們都出現在眼敏感度——cakkhupasāda 中。然後在舊的止息後,新的生起。 這些數字證明了這一點。這部經描述了緣起過程的重要性。它依賴於心臟基地。

對象並不相同;在這裡生起,在這裡消逝。它們無法從該位置移開。擁有知識的人會產生厭離。緣起過程在內觀觀照中非常重要。五蘊整天都在生起和止息苦。

因此,佛陀說,每位佛陀都教導苦的生起和止息。因此,五蘊中生起的任何事物都是苦的生起。樂無法生起。從毒樹中只會結出毒果。毒果中也只有毒種子。毒種子又會長出毒樹。

它會像這樣不停地進行:集→苦→集→苦等等。這裡集是種子,苦是樹。如果 沒有得到殺死毒藥的藥物,樹和種子永遠不會被切斷。因此,佛陀說,這就像 一個人想要熄滅火焰,卻反覆將乾柴放入火焰中。

你們都像飛向火焰的昆蟲,將其視為黃金。每個人都渴望天上的黃金,祈求在 那裡轉世。到達那裡後,再次死亡。讓我們提取要點。只有了解之前現象的不 存在,才會變成無常、苦、無我和不淨。

始終觀察自己五蘊的緣起過程。在前面,一個緣起的法生起,智從後面觀察等等;然後它才會變成內觀。般若切斷與輪迴相連的法。不要說有很多修行方法。如果您觀照自己的緣起過程,那就是正確的。

在這裡,吳昂贊韋(U Aung Zan Way)和吳丁(U Tin)必須記住觀照緣生法一一結果。觀照生起的結果法。而不是觀照緣起一一它是原因法。生起(samuppanna)是生起的法。緣起(samuppāda)是產生的法。

因此,您無法觀照它。必須仔細記住這一點。生起法和智必須保持一致(一個接一個)。如果沒有保持一致,它將以徒勞無功告終。有時人們會說您的心就像猴子一樣。這不是用智說的,而是用恨說的。

(註:吳昂贊韋和吳丁是政治家,在他去世的那一年成為他的弟子。他們都在修行上取得了成功。後來吳丁成為一名比丘,被稱為達摩薩羅尊者(Sayadaw U Dhammasara)。)

How to Perform Dāna?

12th October 1962

Making dāna is not using up one's money, instead one gains from it. (Some heavenly beings came and mentioned this point to the Buddha. Most people think, including Buddhists, by performing dāna, one used up money, wealth, and possessions. So they usually ask the donors how much they had spent the money. The right question should be how much they gained from it.)

It's like a house is on fire. During the burning, what one takes out as much as from the house is what one gains from it. In the same way, everyone is burnt with the 11 kinds of fire (greed, hatred, delusion, old age, sickness, death, sorrow, lamentation, suffering, grief, and despair) and five kinds of enemies (water, fire, king, thieves, and nonfilial family members).

In these kinds of situation, performing dāna is like saving things from the burning house. Another point here is we are not doing this for human and heavenly worlds. It's still burnt with fire after arriving there if we are for these purposes. Now we are taking out the causes for Nibbāna. In this way we gain the unburnable priceless property (i.e., Nibbāna).

If you are taking out things like a blind man, only get the valueless properties. (Maybe it's like a baby was inside the burning house. Instead of taking out the baby first, took out other things. Most Buddhists are doing like this man.). It's quite a different between a blind man and a visionary one to take things out. 31 realms of existences are not free from fire. Outside them is free from fire.

Therefore, today is the big dāna of a person with right view. It's easy to give others in ordinary way as just giving out (Even that much is quite difficult for most people because they don't know the benefit of wholesome kammas, the law of causes and effects). The khandha is also on fire. The possessions are also on fire.

The khandha is burnt with fire of birth, ageing, and death (with the 11 kinds of fire). The possessions are burnt with the fire of five enemies; such as water (e.g., in 2011 Tsunami in N. E. Japan), fire (e.g., 9/11 2001 fire in the New York World Trade Center), thieves, by one's own family members, kings (governments of nowadays and corrupted officials).

(Sayadaw continued to talk about the results of offering monk robes, umbrellas, and sandals. And then, about the beginning of human birth with the pregnancy) Birth is dukkha sacca and knowing it is magga sacca. You have to change your mind for I am offering these things with the knowledge of knowing dukkha sacca. Saddhā (faith) follows behind and knowledge (ñāṇa) is leading at the front.

You must believe it that except Nibbāna, it'll never give other results. (Sayadaw continued to ask people to follow his reciting for the purpose of Nibbāna in Burmese.) These things are offered for the purpose of Nibbāna. Therefore, except Nibbāna, don't crave for other things. We were craving for other things before, that until now not free from dukkha.

Someone who fears of dukkha will realize Nibbāna. You can decide that someone not fear dukkha will never get Nibbāna (Continued to talk about dukkha of near birth and delivering. After that, talk about the dukkha of the new born baby). The baby becomes a disable being. It can't speak when hungry or wanting to urinate and defecate.

(Continued to talk about ageing and sickness. And then talked about dukkha near death and dying.) You have to change your mind for not wanting the dukkha of death. With the knowledge of disenchantment for dukkha and offer these things. You should have the attitude of offering dāna only for the purpose of Nibbāna.

以下是莫哥尊者於 1962 年 10 月 12 日開示的《如何修布施(How to Perform Dāna?)》的繁體中文翻譯:

如何修布施

1962年10月12日

布施並不是耗損自己的財物,而是獲得。

(有些天神曾向佛陀提到這一點。但大多數人,包括佛教徒,都認為布施就是「花錢」、「損失錢財、財富與物品」。所以通常都會問布施者:「你花了多少錢?」——其實正確的提問應該是:「你從中得到了多少?」)

這就像房子失火了,在大火中搶救出多少東西,就是你真正的收穫。

同樣地,每一位眾生都正被十一種火所焚燒:貪、瞋、癡、老、病、死、愁、悲、苦、憂、惱;以及**五種敵人**:水災、火災、國王(政治勢力)、盜賊、不孝的家人。

在這樣的局勢下修布施,就像是從火場中搶救出寶貴財物。

此外,我們布施不是為了人天果報而做, 因為就算投生為人、天,也仍舊會被火焰燒灼。

現在我們是為了涅槃而將財物取出,

這樣就能獲得「不會被燒毀的無價財產」——也就是涅槃。

如果像盲人一樣取出財物,就只會拿到沒有價值的東西。

(譬如,房子著火時,裡面有嬰兒,而你卻只搶救出雜物,放著孩子不管—— 多數佛教徒就像這樣。)

所以「盲人」與「明眼人」在火場中搶救的物件完全不同。

三十一界中,沒有一界不是在火中。

唯有超出三十一界,才無火焰燒灼。

因此,今日這場布施,是具正見之人所修的大布施。

單純地布施是容易的(雖說即便如此,對多數人而言也不容易,因為他們不了 解善業的利益與因果法則)。

但應知:你的「身」也在火中燃燒;你的「財產」也同樣在火中燃燒。

你的身五蘊,正被生、老、死之火焚燒(即那十一種火)。 你的財物,則正被五種敵人之火吞噬:水(如 2011 年日本東北大海嘯)、火 (如 2001 年 9/11 世貿大火)、盜賊、自己家人、政權(政府與貪官的橫徵暴 斂)。

(接著,尊者講述了供僧衣、僧傘、僧鞋等物品的功德,以及人身的開始——懷孕的苦。)

生是苦諦(dukkha sacca),知生為苦,就是道諦(magga sacca)。

因此,你要改變心念:

「我今日布施,是因為我知道這一切是苦諦。」

讓信心(saddhā)跟隨於後,讓智慧(ñāṇa)走在前面。

你應堅信:除了涅槃外,不會有其他報應。

(尊者接著引導大家以緬語發願,說:「這些東西,是為了涅槃而供養。」)

因此,除了涅槃之外,不要再渴求其他任何東西。

我們以前之所以未能脫離苦,是因為一直渴求別的東西。

一位懼怕苦的人,才會證得涅槃。

你可以這麼斷定:若一個人對苦沒有恐懼,他是絕不可能證得涅槃的。

(尊者繼續講述臨產之苦、分娩之苦,以及新生嬰兒所受之苦。)

嬰兒出生時,等同殘障,飢餓時無法言語,大小便也無法表達。

(之後尊者又講到老苦、病苦,以及死亡的逼迫。)

你要轉換心念:不願意接受死亡之苦。

帶著厭離苦的智慧來修布施。

你應該抱持這樣的心態來布施——

「我所布施的一切, 皆為了涅槃。」

如何行布施?

1962年10月12日

行布施不是耗盡一個人的錢財,而是從中獲益。(一些天人來向佛陀提到這一點。大多數人,包括佛教徒,都認為行布施會耗盡金錢、財富和財產。因此, 他們通常會問捐贈者花了多少錢。正確的問題應該是他們從中獲得了多少。)

這就像房子著火一樣。在燃燒過程中,從房子裡取出多少,就是從中獲得多少。 同樣地,每個人都被十一種火(貪、瞋、癡、老、病、死、憂、悲、苦、惱、 絕望)和五種敵人(水、火、國王、盜賊和不孝的家庭成員)所燃燒。

在這種情況下,行布施就像從燃燒的房子裡拯救東西。這裡的另一點是,我們不是為了人間和天界而做這件事。如果我們為了這些目的,到達那裡後仍然會被火燃燒。現在我們正在取出涅槃的因。這樣,我們就獲得了不可燃燒的無價之財(即涅槃)。

如果您像盲人一樣取出東西,只會得到沒有價值的財產。(也許就像一個嬰兒 在燃燒的房子裡。不是先取出嬰兒,而是取出其他東西。大多數佛教徒都像這 個人一樣。)盲人和有遠見的人取出東西有很大的不同。三十一有都無法擺脫 火。它們之外才能擺脫火。

因此,今天是具有正見的人的大布施。以普通方式給予他人很容易,就像只是 給予一樣(即使如此,對大多數人來說也很困難,因為他們不知道善業的好處, 因果法則)。五蘊也在燃燒。財產也在燃燒。

五蘊被出生、衰老和死亡之火燃燒(被十一種火燃燒)。財產被五種敵人之火燃燒;例如水(例如,2011年日本東北海嘯)、火(例如,2001年9月11日 紐約世界貿易中心火災)、盜賊、自己的家庭成員、國王(當今的政府和腐敗的官員)。

(尊者繼續談論供養僧袍、兩傘和涼鞋的結果。然後,談論人類出生的開始,即懷孕。)出生是苦諦,了解它是道諦。您必須改變您的想法,即我以了解苦諦的知識供養這些東西。信(saddhā)在後面跟隨,知識(ñāṇa)在前面引導。

您必須相信,除了涅槃,它永遠不會給予其他結果。(尊者繼續要求人們用緬語跟隨他的背誦,以達到涅槃的目的。)這些東西是為了涅槃的目的而供養的。因此,除了涅槃,不要渴望其他東西。我們以前渴望其他東西,所以直到現在還沒有從苦中解脫出來。

害怕苦的人會證悟涅槃。您可以斷定,不害怕苦的人永遠不會得到涅槃(繼續談論臨近出生和分娩的苦。之後,談論新生嬰兒的苦)。嬰兒成為殘疾的人。當飢餓或想要排尿和排便時,它無法說話。

(繼續談論衰老和疾病。然後談論臨終和死亡的苦。)您必須改變您的想法, 不想要死亡的苦。以對苦的厭離知識供養這些東西。您應該抱持只為涅槃的目的供養布施的態度。

Staying with the Truly Reliable Dhamma

15th October 1962

[This was the last talk of Sayadaw because he passed away on the 17th of October. Actually he had to give a talk on that day (October 17th) for the Kaṭhina Robe offering Ceremony. Also it was unnecessary for the lay supporters who offered the robes and requisites because he had given a talk for them on the 11th as a preliminary offering for the family members together with the yogis practicing there, creating a situation for them to concentrate what they were doing. But he couldn't make it again on the 17th for the general lay supporters.]

With the contemplation of bhāvana by teaching and listening at the same time, all of them were gaining liberations (Khemaka and the sixty monks were becoming arahants. It referred to the Khemaka Sutta of Saṃyutta Nikāya here). If I am asking all of you where you are coming from, your answer could be "I don't know". Dhamma sent you here (to the human existence).

Dhammas are parents, so you have to follow its arrangements. Therefore, is it possible without it? You don't know at all where you are coming from. Sent by dhammas, you all arrived here. Therefore, there are only dhammas have to rely on.

After enlightenment the Buddha thought, "Why I became a Buddha? If there is anyone excels me in sīla, samādhi, and paññā, I'll take refuge and worship him." Therefore, he looked for that being in the 31 realms of existence. But he couldn't find anyone excelled him in sīla, samādhi, and paññā. With Dhamma he became a Buddha.

So he took refuge in the Dhamma. Sent by dhamma, you arrived here. After that, you will be sent by dhamma to somewhere. If I am asking you; "Do you prefer to be sent by ① dāna (or) ② sīla (or) ③ samādhi (or) ④ vipassanā (or) ⑤ unwholesome dhammas?" Therefore, there are five questions.

Unwholesome dhammas send you to woeful planes of existence. Nobody wants to go there. Dāna sends you to human and heavenly worlds. These are the places with the dangers of ageing, sickness and death. Sīla is also the same. Samādhi sends you to the worlds of 20 types of Brahma Gods, with the useless long life. With the long life of dukkha because carry dukkha sacca with them.

Vipassanā dhamma sends you to Nibbāna—the ending of dukkha. Before you were confused and sent by unwholesome dhammas. You had been to human and heavenly worlds for many times. In the end met with ageing, sickness, and death, sorrow and lamentation. With sīla is in the same way.

If you want to go to a place without dukkha, then practice hard in vipassanā. And will arrive to the Path Knowledge. Except Nibbāna, it'll send you to nowhere. Send you to be free from three vaṭṭas, i.e., kilesa, kamma, and vipāka vaṭṭas.

Before not knowing the truth and sent by dhammas without any choices and arrived randomly to everywhere. Some are sent by dhammas to the Hells. Some are sent by dhamma to heavenly worlds and after that, fell down from there in ugly ways (for example, the 500 celestial nymphs of Subrahmā Devata).

In the Brahma Worlds are also the same. (In the Dhammapada stories, the Buddha mentioned about a sow, he met during alms round. She was a brahma god before. After died and born as human being. And after died as human being and born as a sow). By knowing the truth and don't want to go anywhere.

I have talked on sacca dhamma and let you know how to make the choices. I want to say you all for looking the truly reliable dhammas. Not knowing the truth and don't know how to look for it. Don't let kammas making the arrangements. But let ñāṇa do it. Kammic arrangements are 31 realms of existence. Ñāṇa arrangement is transcending them.

Ñāṇa also has five kinds:

① Kammassakatā ñāṇa—do good and has good results. Don't follow it. I do it and I get it—so it has wrong views with it. It sends beings to higher planes and afterwards pulls them down again.

(Sayadaw gave the simile of a bird hit with a poison arrow. It flies up to some distance and falls down again after the poison spreading out in the body. Subrahmā devas story was a good example.

- ② Nāma-rūpa pariggaha ñāṇa—Discernment of mind and matter. Also don't rely on it. Why? It's a cūḷa-sotāpanna and free from apāyabhūmi only for one life.
- ③ Paccaya pariggha ñāṇa—Discernment of the conditions of mind and matter; knowledge of knowing the D. A. process, freeing from apāyabhūmi only for one life. So it's not a happy dying.
- 4 Vipassanā ñāṇa—knowledge of knowing impermanence. Don't be satisfied with it. Have to take rebirth in the second life.
- ⑤ Therefore, the best way is practicing for the cessation of all dukkha. Don't be satisfied with only one cessation but four times of cessations. These are the four Path Knowledge. Among the five knowledge, the Path Knowledge is the best one. There is no other truly reliable thing except the Path Knowledge; because there is no dukkha.

You never heard it before in your whole life. People never had been analyzed that much, mostly talking about one kind of merits only. U Aung Zan Way and U Than Maung, we are getting old now. You all have to practice hard with the thought of in the future this sāsana will not exist. (Both lay men were a little older than Sayadaw and met him in his last year of life.

Here mentioned this sāsana (teaching) will not exist had double meanings. One referred to the teaching of the Buddha, and the other Sayadaw's talks. Here was referring to his teaching. Next two days he would lay down his burdened khandha. This was a hinting to his passing away soon.)

Mahamedin (in Burmese refers to Islamic Faith) is sassata view—Eternalism. Communism is uccheda view—Annihilationism. Even they don't have the first and second knowledge (have faith in laws of kamma and the knowledge of the five khandhas).

In the world, only these views exist and the world was overwhelmed by them. They rely on weaponry and wealth to converting people (at that time, it was like a prediction for the future). Even not including us, next generation will follow them.

Our Dhamma (Buddha Dhamma) have to walk between sassata and uccheda views only if you discern impermanence and in the middle way.

Arising ← Nibbāna → Passing away Sassata ← Middle way → uccheda

應依靠佛法,而非外在力量

1962年10月15日

【這是尊者最後一次開示。因為他於兩天後的 10 月 17 日圓寂。原定當天為卡汀袈裟布施法會中,大眾居士舉行正式供養時所說的開示。但尊者已於 10 月 11 日,為布施者之家屬及正在禪修的行者們,提前開示並接受預先供養,使他們能專注於修行。因此,10 月 17 日的法會尊者最終未能出席。】

透過「教導與聆聽同時進行」的修習(bhāvana),大家都能得到解脫。 (這裡提到的是《相應部·Khemaka 經》,Khemaka 長老與六十位比丘聽法後證 得阿羅漢果。)

如果我問你們:「你是從哪裡來的?」

你們可能會回答:「不知道。」

是法(Dhamma)將你送來的。

法就如父母,因此你必須依照法的安排來走。

那麼,沒有它,怎麼可能呢? 你根本不知道自己從哪裡來。 被法所驅使,你來到了這裡。 所以,**只有法,是我們真正值得依靠的。**

佛陀成佛之後思惟道:「我為何成為佛?若有任何眾生在戒、定、慧上勝過我, 我將依止並禮敬他。」

於是佛陀觀察三十一界,但找不到任何一位在戒、定、慧上勝過他者。 因為是依靠法(Dhamma)而成佛,佛陀便歸依於法。

你們也是被法所驅使而來。 之後,也將被法送往其他地方。

若我問你們:「你想被哪一種法送往下一站?」

- 1. 施 (dāna)?
- 2. 戒 (sīla) ?
- 3. 定(samādhi)?
- 4. 觀(vipassanā)?
- 5. 邪法(不善法)?
- 邪法會將你送往惡道,沒有人願意前往那裡。
- 施與戒 會讓你投生於人界與天界,這些地方仍有生、老、病、死之危險。
- 定 將你送至色界、無色界二十類梵天中,雖有長壽,但只是**延長苦的時間**,因仍舊背負著苦諦(dukkha sacca)。
- 觀法 才會將你送往涅槃——苦的止息之處。

你們過去因迷妄而被不善法牽引,流轉人界、天界無數次,最終仍遇上老、病、死、愁、悲……

就算是持戒者也不例外。

若你**想前往沒有苦的地方**,就要努力修習**觀法**(vipassanā),並將達至**道智** (Magga Ñāṇa)。

除了涅槃,它不會將你送往其他地方。

它會讓你脫離三輪迴(kilesa、kamma、vipāka——煩惱輪、業輪、果報輪)。

從前你們不知真理,被法盲目牽引、任意流轉。

有人被法送往地獄,有人上升至天界,後又急墮惡趣(如 Subrahmā 天神的五百天女,從天界墮落)。

在梵天界中也同樣如此。

(佛陀曾在《法句經》中提到他在乞食時遇到的一頭母豬,她前世是梵天,之 後轉生為人,再轉生為豬。)

若能知見真理,就不會想再去任何地方。

我講解「真理之法」(sacca dhamma),是要讓你們知道如何選擇,學會依靠 真正可靠的法。

若不了解真理,就無法明智選擇。

不要讓業(kamma)來決定你的未來,而應讓智慧(ñāṇa)來做主。

業的安排是三十一界,

而智慧的安排是超越輪迴。

智慧(ñāṇa)也有五種:

① 業異熟智 (kammassakatā ñāṇa):

知道「行善得善報」。

但不要依賴它,因為它含有錯誤見解(我做、我得),會把眾生送到善道後, 又再隨落。 (尊者舉了中毒鳥的譬喻:中了毒的鳥能暫時飛起,但最終仍會因毒發而墜落; Subrahmā 天神的故事便是一例。)

② 名色分別智(nāma-rūpa pariggaha ñāṇa):

觀察名與色的分別。

不應依靠它,因為這只是「小入流」(cūla-sotāpanna),只保一世不墮惡趣。

③ 緣起分別智 (paccaya pariggaha ñāṇa) :

觀察名色之因緣、明瞭十二因緣。也只保一世不墮惡趣,不足為喜。

④ 觀智 (vipassanā ñāṇa):

觀察無常,亦不應滿足於此。 因仍需再投生一次。

⑤ 唯有修行至苦的止息(涅槃),才是最好的選擇。

不應只滿足於一次止息,應證得四道四果。

在這五種智慧中,「道智」是最可靠的。

除了道智之外,沒有任何法是值得依靠的,因為它完全無有苦。

你們從未聽過這些道理。

世間人從未如此深入地分析過,大多只講一種福德功德而已。

U Aung Zan Way 與 U Than Maung,

我們年紀都大了。

你們應該努力修行,常作如是思惟:「未來這佛法可能將不存在。」

這裡「佛法不存在」有雙重意涵:

一是佛陀的教法,二是尊者本人的教導。

此處所指是尊者自己的教導。

因為兩天後他將捨離五蘊。這是對自己即將入滅的暗示。

尊者接著說道:

回教(Mahamedin)屬於常見(sassata diṭṭhi); 共產主義則是**斷見(uccheda diṭṭhi)**。

他們甚至無法具足第一與第二階段的智慧(如信業果、識五蘊),整個世間幾乎被這兩種見解主導。 他們依靠武力與財力來轉化他人。 (這番話似乎也預示了未來世界的局勢)

不管我們如何,後代子孫恐將隨之而去。

我們的佛法,唯有在**見到無常**與走中道時,才得以安住。

生起←涅槃→滅去

常見 ← 中道 → 斷見

安住於真正可靠的佛法

1962年10月15日

[這是尊者的最後一次開示,因為他於 10 月 17 日圓寂。實際上,他必須在當天 (10 月 17 日)為迦絺那袈裟供養儀式進行開示。而且,供養袈裟和資具的在 家信徒也沒有必要,因為他已在 11 日為他們進行了開示,作為家庭成員和在那 裡修行的瑜伽士的初步供養,為他們創造一個專注於他們所做的事情的環境。 但他於 17 日再次未能為一般在家信徒進行開示。]

透過同時教導和聽聞的觀照修行(bhāvana),他們都獲得了解脫(翅摩迦和六十位比丘成為阿羅漢。這裡指的是《相應部》的翅摩迦經)。如果我問你們所有人從哪裡來,你們的回答可能是「我不知道」。佛法送你們來這裡(來到人類的存在)。

法是父母,所以你們必須遵循它的安排。因此,沒有它有可能嗎?你們根本不知道自己從哪裡來。你們都是被法送來這裡的。因此,只有法是必須依靠的。

成道後,佛陀想:「我為什麼成為佛陀?如果有人在戒、定、慧方面超越我, 我將皈依並崇拜他。」因此,他在三十一有中尋找那個眾生。但他找不到任何 人在戒、定、慧方面超越他。他透過佛法成為佛陀。

因此,他皈依了佛法。你們是被佛法送來這裡的。之後,你們將被佛法送到某個地方。如果我問你們:「你們喜歡被①布施(或)②持戒(或)③禪定(或)④內觀(或)⑤不善法送去嗎?」因此,有五個問題。

不善法將你們送到惡趣。沒有人想去那裡。布施將你們送到人間和天界。這些是充滿衰老、疾病和死亡危險的地方。持戒也是一樣。禪定將你們送到二十種梵天世界,擁有無用的長壽。因為攜帶著苦諦,擁有長壽的苦。

內觀法將你們送到涅槃——苦的止息。之前你們感到困惑,被不善法送去。你們已經多次去過人間和天界。最終遇到了衰老、疾病和死亡、悲傷和哀號。持戒也是一樣。

如果你們想去一個沒有苦的地方,那麼努力修行內觀。你們將到達道智。除了涅槃,它不會送你們去任何地方。送你們從三輪迴中解脫出來,即煩惱輪迴、業輪迴和果報輪迴。

之前不了解真理,被法送去,沒有任何選擇,隨機到達各處。有些人被法送到 地獄。有些人被法送到天界,之後以醜陋的方式從那裡墜落(例如,須婆梵天 的五百位天女)。

梵天世界也是一樣。(在《法句經》的故事中,佛陀提到他在托缽時遇到的一 隻母豬。她以前是梵天。死後轉世為人。死後又轉世為母豬。)透過了解真理, 不想去任何地方。

我已經談論了諦法,讓你們知道如何做出選擇。我想告訴你們所有人尋找真正可靠的法。不了解真理,也不知道如何尋找它。不要讓業力做出安排。而是讓智力來做。業力的安排是三十一有。智力的安排是超越它們。

智力也有五種:

①業果智(Kammassakatā ñāṇa)——行善有善報。不要遵循它。我做我得—— 因此它帶有錯誤的觀點。它將眾生送到更高的境界,然後又將他們拉下來。

(尊者舉了一個被毒箭射中的鳥的例子。它飛到一定距離,然後在毒藥在體內 擴散後再次墜落。須婆梵天的故事是一個很好的例子。

- ②名色分別智(Nāma-rūpa pariggaha ñāṇa)——分辨身心。也不要依靠它。為什麼?它是一個小入流者,只在一生中擺脫惡趣。
- ③緣起分別智(Paccaya pariggha ñāṇa)——分辨身心的條件;了解緣起過程的知識,只在一生中擺脫惡趣。因此,這不是一個快樂的死亡。
- ④内觀智(Vipassanā ñāṇa)——了解無常的知識。不要滿足於它。必須在第二 牛中轉世。
- ⑤因此,最好的方法是修行以止息所有的苦。不要滿足於一次的止息,而是四次的止息。這些是四種道智。在五種知識中,道智是最好的。除了道智,沒有其他真正可靠的東西;因為沒有苦。

你們一生中從未聽過它。人們從未進行過如此多的分析,大多數只談論一種功德。吳昂贊韋和吳丹芒,我們現在都老了。你們都必須努力修行,想到未來這個佛陀教法將不復存在。(這兩位在家信徒比尊者年長一些,在他生命的最後一年遇到了他。

這裡提到這個佛陀教法將不復存在,有雙重含義。一個指的是佛陀的教導,另一個指的是尊者的開示。這裡指的是他的教導。接下來的兩天,他將放下他負擔沉重的五蘊。這是暗示他即將圓寂。)

默罕默丁(在緬甸語中指的是伊斯蘭教)是常見——常見論。共產主義是斷見——斷滅論。即使他們沒有第一和第二種知識(對業力法則有信心和對五蘊的知識)。

在世界上,只有這些觀點存在,世界被它們淹沒。他們依靠武器和財富來轉化 人們(當時,這就像對未來的預測)。即使不包括我們,下一代也會追隨他們。

只有當你們認知無常和中道時,我們的佛法(佛陀的教導)才必須在常見和斷 見之間行走。

生起 ← 涅槃 → 消逝 常見 ← 中道 → 斷見

On Vipassanā Bhāvana

1st to 2nd September 1961

Т1

Where does the khandha come from? It has the cause. It comes from taṇhā (craving). With an object, taṇhā (craving) can arise. It has a lot of objects. There are six types of objects (form, sound ... mind objects). From the affection, craving taṇhā arises.

The most affectionate thing for oneself is our own khandhas. With affection to oneself and we get the khandhas. With the khandhas, we have ageing, sickness and death. In vipassanā contemplation, we have to contemplate our most beloved khandhas. Use the four Satipaṭṭhāna in the vipassanā contemplation.

Kaya, vedanā, citta, and dhamma all are in the khandhas. No need to contemplate all of them. I'll show you only with the mind. With the contemplation of mind, the other three also included. I'll talk about the contemplation. We have the identity view of my mind—sakkāya diṭṭhi.

There are more wrong views on the mind than others (khandhas). Wanting to become a sotāpanna, first contemplate the mind. This is to cut off diṭṭhi. The Buddha said we took the mind as mine. So we attach to it with wrong view and craving.

Therefore, we get the khandhas with ageing, sickness, and death. It was like an alcoholic drink mixed with poison. We didn't know it and drank it with affection and had to die. The Buddha taught us to contemplate the mind as impermanent, suffering, not-self, disease and danger.

The Buddha taught different ways. Contemplate anicca—impermanent also fulfill the task. If you don't contemplate and taking it as permanent, bliss, self, healthy, and safety, will have affection for it. With affection you get the khandha and encounter the dangers of ageing, sickness, and death.

How many types of mind? You have to note it down carefully because you will go back. (These lay people were new yogis and came to practice under Sayadaw's guidance from lower Burma). There are not many minds. ① Seeing (consciousness) ② Hearing ③ Smelling ④ Tasting ⑤ On the body is unpleasant consciousness. Such as itches, pains and aches, etc. ⑥ On the body is pleasant consciousness. These are six external guest minds; arising at the external.

Internally, ① greed ② hatred ③ deluded mind ④ non-greed (want to give) ⑤ non-hatred (love, compassion). These arise at internal. So there are five internal guest minds. Amoha is non-delusion, so not including here. (This is the contemplative mind).

There are two host minds: breathing in mind and breathing out mind. Don't take the physical air. Take the mind; wanting to breathe in and breathe out minds. This is cittānupassanā—Contemplation of minds and can't take the air element.

Amoha—non-delusion is not only one, but has five factors: ① right view ② right thought ③ right mindfulness ④ right effort ⑤ right samādhi. These are the five path factors (maggans). If seeing, hearing, etc. arising, contemplate its impermanence. Contemplate as anicca. Contemplate whatever is arising. On the whole body, it'll arise anywhere.

Sometimes minds of greed, anger, and restlessness arise. Whatever arising is only one. Contemplate them with the five maggans (i.e., amoha). With the contemplation, and they become maggans. That's what it means, you get the maggans.

For example, greed arises and you observe. And then it's not there. It's impermanent. (Two minds can't arise at the same moment. Greed is not there anymore when the observing mind comes in.) The contemplative mind is magga. Impermanence and magga (anicca / magga) have to be in line (one after another and not let other kilesa come in between them).

At the time of arising, contemplate it. If nothing arises, just contemplate the host minds (minds of in and out breaths). If anicca / magga are in line, the I-ness (identity view) does not come in between them. Without the contemplation of the arising dhamma, taṇhā and diṭṭhi will follow behind it. With them, you will get khandha. With the five khandhas, ageing and death follow.

It's cutting off taṇhā, ageing, and death with the contemplation. The contemplative mind can be called amoha or right view. With the contemplation, taṇhā and diṭṭhi die away. No khandha arises when clinging with (taṇhā) and wrong view (diṭṭhi-upādāna) die away. It's impossible not to do the practice. If you don't have foods to eat, never mind. But you must do the practice.

Right view and right thought are vipassanā. Sati, viriya and samādhi are samatha. So it's the contemplation with samatha and vipassanā. Knowing the arising is sati. You know it because you have samādhi. You are making effort that you know it. Therefore, it includes samatha. Knowing as these dhammas are unstable. This is paññā knows it. Sending sati and paññā towards anicca is samatha / vipassanā. Don't establish samatha separately.

The Buddha taught three ways: ① Samatha the first and follow with vipassanā, ② vipassanā first and follow with samatha and ③ samatha and vipassanā together. Now I teach you samatha and vipassanā together. Why is that? The others are practicing separately and it takes longer time. Your life span is short.

So it is good to combine together. If knowing the every arising dhamma, samādhi knows it. If knowing the every passing away dhamma, vipassanā knows it. Therefore, with the knowing of impermanence, they are together. By seeing the arising dhamma and uccheda view dies away. By seeing the passing away dhamma, sassata view dies away. By seeing both of them, sakkāya view dies away. By seeing both of them, know that it's not me and not mine. So identity view dies away. Three wrong views fall away. With diṭṭhi and taṇhā die and cutting off saṁsāra. This magga is cutting it off. The cessation of taṇhā and khandha is Nibbāna. The cessation of ageing and death is Nibbāna.

In the contemplation, anicca and magga have to be in line. Don't let other dhammas come in between. Don't let greed, hatred, etc. come in. If they come in, can't realize Nibbāna in seven days. Without then, even practice in the morning, and can realize it in the evening. (These were mentioned in the Satipaṭṭhāna Sutta.) If discerning of impermanence and you have three wholesome roots (Tihetuka person), and will realize Nibbāna in this life.

There are ten kinds of kilesas (greed, hared, delusion, conceit, wrong views, doubt, sloth, restlessness, shamelessness, fearlessness of wrong doing). If you can practice anicca / magga in line, none of them can come in. Increase your effort. In this way of practice in the morning, and realize it in the evening. These were taught by the Buddha.

If you are sharp in knowledge (ñāṇa), you will make it. If it's weak, it takes seven days. And if very weak, it takes longer. It depends on your ñāṇa. After knowing the way of practice, it's important not let kilesa come in. Increasing your sati, samādhi, viriya, and it cannot come in. If you discern impermanence, the first stage is successful. And continue the contemplation.

Impermanence is one's own death. After sometime, become disenchantment. With disenchantment develop to the second stage. You don't need to ask someone about it. You all have to go back, so I'll explain you to the end of process. Even you are disenchanting with the process and must continue with contemplation.

Even not wanting, just try to do it. And will develop to the third stage. You see them as dukkha sacca in your knowledge. This is developing to the third stage. All will disappear if you know them thoroughly as dukkha sacca. This is the knowledge of seeing Nibbāna.

The eight path factors are completed. All the sankhāra dhammas cease. Ñāṇa is seeing the cessation of sankhāra. The cessation of sankhāra means khandha disappears. And become a sotāpanna. After that Fruition knowledge arises. After come reviewing knowledge.

The root of wrong views disappears and no more khandhas to woeful planes. You realize the first Nibbāna. Return to the 13 objects of contemplation if you want to realize the second Nibbāna. And will see impermanence, their disenchantment and ending. The higher path knowledge is also in this way. No other special dhamma for it.

T2

The Buddha taught two knowledge; insight knowledge (vipassanā ñāṇa) and Path Knowledge (magga ñāṇa). Except seeing the impermanence of the five khandhas, insight knowledge does not see other things. Insight knowledge has the five path factors. As knowledge it's only one. That's right view.

During discerning of impermanence, the other four factors are also including. Vipassanā ñāṇa observes the khandha and not see other things and only seeing the arising and passing away. Go and ask the practicing yogi. He'll answer you as seeing the arising and passing away. Not seeing of mind, feeling, etc. only seeing the arising and passing away. Then can decide as you get the insight knowledge.

Seeing arising and passing away dhammas and in this life will get the liberation. The only existence is only that. Body, feeling, etc. only exist as names. If you see this, you have right view; whereas if not seeing this, you have not arrived here yet. Insight knowledge is seeing sankhāra and anicca (conditioned phenomenon and impermanent).

The lower knowledge sees the five khandhas. Therefore, they are quite different. Seeing the body, feeling, etc. are lower knowledge. It's nāma-rūpapariggaha ñāṇa—Discernment of mind and matter. In the Nidanavagga Saṃyutta—the Buddha taught Susīma only two knowledge for realization of Nibbāna.

These were insight knowledge and Path Knowledge. It needs to explain for clearer. How do the yogis see it? If seeing impermanence, it's insight knowledge. Don't be in confusion with knowledge of rise and fall, knowledge of dissolution, etc. Combine all of these knowledge is insight knowledge.

With short life span and for the realization of Nibbāna, just try for these two knowledge. Vipassanā ñāṇa is the forerunner knowledge to Nibbāna. It's clearing away kilesas before. Nibbāna exists, but not seeing is the cause of kilesas. Nibbāna always exists to someone with the practice.

Why can't we see it? It's covering up by kilesas. If you say you are contemplating but still can't see it yet. It is still covered with kilesas if the impermanence of sankhāra can't be seen with contemplation. The khandha is piling up with impermanence.

Doesn't it exist because you can't see it or because it is covered with kilesas? It's the cause of been covered with them. Vipassanā ñāṇa is clearing up for these things. The Buddha taught the five khandhas were anicca dhammas. This was by someone who discerned it. Ignorance, greed, hatred, and delusion, all these dhammas are covering it.

To show an example, the moon always exists and not seeing is hidden by clouds. You have to blow it away with vipassanā ñāṇa. It's like this simile. If discern it slowly, your kilesa is thick. Practice with the four supreme efforts—sammappadhānā, kilesas being blown away and you will see impermanence (The same as the four right efforts).

When is the insight knowledge coming to an end? If the impermanences are disgusting and disenchanting to you, it's still insight knowledge. See them as dukkha sacca and it'll end. It can't be ended with your desire. If it's coming to an end, impermanences are disappeared. It meets with the Path Knowledge.

Here is completion with the eight path factors. Not seeing impermanences, instead see Nibbāna without them. Vipassanā ñāṇas change into Path Knowledge. Vipassanā ñāṇas open the kilesa cover. Path Knowledge opens the saṅkhata anicca cover. These points are quite important. And then you'll see Nibbāna. These are important for yogis.

Even can open the kilesa cover is quite good now. This is the most important point for yogis. By opening the kilesa cover and meet with anicca. Again anicca covers Nibbāna. Therefore, have to practice and make vipassanā ñāṇa become maturity. When the Path Knowledge arises, the anicca cover is opened and you'll meet with asaṅkhata.

Only have these knowledges. Do you satisfy with it? Firstly, it's important to see impermanence. With the opening of kilesa cover and will see impermanence. Therefore, samādhi is important. And again the cover of impermanence is opened and will see asaṅkhata—Nibbāna.

(非常好,這篇《關於內觀修習(On Vipassanā Bhāvana)》的法語內容你整理得很完整、深入。這兩篇講記可以說是莫哥尊者對修行人直指核心、強調實修的一次重要開示,尤其是關於觀智與道智的分別、如何正確練習「anicca/magga 相續不斷」、以及如何逐層剝除覆蓋涅槃的「蓋障(kilesa、anicca)」等比喻,都極具啟發性。)

關於內觀修習

1961年9月1日至2日

T1

五蘊從哪裡來?它有其因。是從渴愛(taṇhā)而來。有了所緣,渴愛便會生起。 它有許多所緣對象,共有六種(色、聲……到心所緣)。因為愛著,所以渴愛 生起。

對自己而言,最愛的莫過於自己的五蘊。由於對自己的愛著,我們才獲得了五 蘊。而擁有五蘊,也就伴隨著老、病、死的苦。在內觀修習中,我們應當觀照 我們最愛的五蘊。以四念處來進行內觀修習。

身(kāya)、受(vedanā)、心(citta)、法(dhamma)都包含在五蘊之中。 無須觀照所有項目,我將只為你們說明如何觀心。觀心時,其餘三項也一併涵 蓋在內。我要說明的是觀心的修法。我們對「我的心」有身見——即薩迦耶見 (sakkāya-diṭṭhi)。 在五蘊當中,對心的錯誤見解最多。如果想證入初果(須陀洹果),首先要觀心。這是為了斷除邪見(diṭṭhi)。佛陀說我們執著於心是「我」的,因此我們以邪見和渴愛執取於心。

由於這樣,我們獲得了五蘊,並伴隨著老、病、死。這就如同一杯摻了毒藥的酒,我們不知道其中有毒,仍因愛著而飲用,結果便喪命。佛陀教導我們要觀心為無常、苦、無我、疾病與危險。

佛陀教導了許多觀法。只觀「無常」(anicca)也可以完成修道的任務。若不觀照,而將其視為常、樂、我、安穩與安全,便會對其生起愛著。因為愛著而再得五蘊,隨之也會再次遭遇老、病、死的苦難。

那麼,心有幾種?你們要仔細記下來,因為你們即將返回(下緬甸)。(這些在家人是剛來的新修行者,從下緬甸來依止尊者修習。)

心的種類並不多:

- ① 眼識(見)
- ② 耳識(聞)
- ③ 鼻識(嗅)
- ④ 舌識(嚐)
- ⑤ 身上生起的苦受,如癢、痛、麻等
- 6 身上生起的樂受

這六種是外在的客心,是因外境而生起的。

內在的有:

- ① 貪心
- ② 瞋心
- ③ 痴心
- ④ 無貪心(布施之心)
- ⑤ 無瞋心(慈、悲)

這些是在內部生起的五種客心。不含「無痴」(amoha),因為那是觀照的心。

還有兩種主心:入息心與出息心。不是觀外在的空氣,而是觀想要吸氣與呼氣的那個意向心。這就是心念處(cittānupassanā),不能觀風界(物質的空氣流動)。

「無痴」(amoha)不只是單一項目,而包含五個要素:

- ① 正見 (sammā-ditthi)
- ② 正思惟 (sammā-saṅkappa)
- ③ 正念 (sammā-sati)
- ④ 下精進 (sammā-vāyāma)
- ⑤ 正定(sammā-samādhi)

這五項就是五道支 (magganga)。

當見、聞等心生起時,要觀其為無常。無論什麼心生起,都觀為「無常」 (anicca)。全身的任何地方都可能生起這些心。

有時會生起貪、瞋、掉舉等心。無論生起什麼,都只是一個。以這五道支(即無痴)來觀它。如此觀照之後,它們就轉為道支,這就是所謂的「得道支」。

例如貪心生起,你觀照它。之後它就不再存在了,這就是無常。(因為兩個心不能同時生起,當觀照的心生起時,貪心已不再。)觀照的心即是道心(magga)。「無常」與「道心」(anicca / magga)必須一前一後地連接在一起(不讓其他煩惱插入其間)。

在心生起時便觀它。若無心生起,就觀主心(入出息之心)。若「無常/道心」相繼而現,則「我見」無法介入其中。若不觀照生起的法,貪與邪見將會緊跟而來。若有它們,便會再得五蘊,隨之老與死亦會來到。

以觀照來切斷貪愛、老與死。觀照的心可稱為無痴或正見。經由觀照,貪與邪見即斷。不再有五蘊生起,當貪愛與邪見的執取斷除時。這是無法不修的法。即使沒有飯吃也無妨,但修行是一定要做的。

正見與正思惟即是內觀(vipassanā),正念、精進與定即是止(samatha)。所以這是止觀雙修。能知生起的是正念。你之所以能知道,是因為你有定。你能作意而知,這是正精進。因此,它包含止。知道這些法是無常的,這是慧(paññā)之知。把正念與智慧導向無常,即是止觀雙運。不要把止修與觀修分開。

佛陀教導了三種修法:

- ① 先修止,後修觀;
- ② 先修觀,後修止;
- ③ 止觀並修。

我現在教你們的是止觀並修。為什麼呢?因為其他方法是分開修,時間較長。你們的壽命短,所以止觀雙運較為快速。

若能知一切所生之法,是由定所知;若能知一切所滅之法,是由觀所知。因此,當你了知無常時,止與觀便同時具足。見生法則斷除斷見(uccheda-diṭṭhi),見滅法則斷除常見(sassata-diṭṭhi)。見二者皆滅,則斷我見(sakkāya-diṭṭhi)。見二者,則知非我、非我所,身見消除。三種邪見因此而斷。當邪見與貪愛滅時,輪迴(saṁsāra)亦被斷除。這條道即是斷輪迴之道。貪愛與五蘊的止息就是涅槃;老與死的止息也是涅槃。

於觀照中,「無常與道」要緊密相連,不讓其他法插入。不讓貪、瞋等煩惱進入。若它們進來了,七日內無法證涅槃。若無它們,即使早上修習,也可於傍晚證得(此言出自《念住經》)。若能如實觀照無常,並具三善根(tihetuka),今生便能證得涅槃。

有十種煩惱(貪、瞋、癡、慢、邪見、疑、睡眠、掉舉、無慚、無愧)。若你能讓「無常與道」相續現起,這些煩惱一個也無法進來。要增強你的努力。以這種方式,早上修習,晚上證果,佛陀便是如此教導的。

若你的智慧(ñāṇa)銳利,就能完成;若薄弱,則需七日;若更弱,則需更長時間。全視你的智慧而定。知修法後,最重要的是不讓煩惱進來。增長你的正念、定與精進,它們便無法進入。若你能見無常,則第一階段已成功,之後繼續觀照。

無常即是自己的死亡。不久之後,將產生厭離(nibbidā)。隨著厭離,便進入第二階段。你不需要去問別人。你們都即將回去,我將把修行的全過程講到最後。即使產生厭離,也必須繼續觀照。

即便不想,也要努力去做,這樣會進展到第三階段。你會從觀智中見它們為苦諦(dukkha sacca)。這即是第三階段的發展。若你能徹底了解它們為苦諦,一切現象將止息。這就是見涅槃的智慧。

八正道圓滿,所有行法止息。智慧見行法之滅。行法止息即是五蘊消失,並證入初果(須陀洹)。之後生起果智(phala ñāṇa),接著是隨後智(paccavekkhaṇa ñāṇa)。

根本邪見已斷,無有再墮惡道之蘊。你已證得初次的涅槃。若想證得第二次的涅槃,則返回十三觀所繼續修習。你將見無常、厭離與止息。更高的道智亦是這樣成就,無需另有特別的法。

第二部分(T2)

佛陀教導了兩種智慧:內觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)與道智(magga ñāṇa)。除了觀見五蘊的無常之外,內觀智不會見到其他事物。內觀智具備五種道支(五道支法),作為一種智慧,它即是正見(sammādiṭṭhi)。

當正在觀察無常時,其他四種道支也包含其中。內觀智觀察的是五蘊,不觀察其他事物,只是見到生起與滅去。你若去問一位正在修行的禪修者,他會回答你:「我見到的是生起與滅去。」不是見到心、受等,而是見到「生滅」。那麼,你就可以判斷他已經獲得內觀智。

見到法的生起與滅去,即能於今生中獲得解脫。唯一存在的只是這個生滅。色、受等,僅是語言的名稱而已。若你見到這一點,即是具足正見;若還未見到,則尚未抵達這裡。內觀智是見到行法(sankhāra)與無常(anicca)。

而較低的智慧則是見到五蘊。二者是有明顯差異的。見到身、受等,是屬於較低的智慧,這是名色分別智(nāma-rūpa-pariggaha ñāṇa)。在《因緣相應》(Nidānavagga Saṃyutta)中,佛陀僅教導須斯摩尊者(Susīma)兩種智慧以證得涅槃,即內觀智與道智。

這一點需要進一步解釋使其更為清楚。禪修者是怎麼見到的呢?若見到無常, 即是內觀智。不必混淆於「生滅智」、「壞滅智」等名相之中。這些智慧合起 來就是內觀智。

生命短暫,為了證得涅槃,你只需努力於這兩種智慧。內觀智是通往涅槃的先導智慧,會先清除煩惱(kilesa)。涅槃是存在的,但看不見是因為煩惱的遮蔽。對於一位修行者而言,涅槃始終存在。

那為何我們看不見?因為被煩惱遮蓋了。你若說你正在修觀,卻仍看不見,這 就表示無常尚未顯現於觀察中,仍被煩惱所掩蓋。五蘊如山堆一般地堆積著無 常。

那麼,是因為它不存在所以你看不到,還是因為它被煩惱遮住?答案是因為被煩惱遮蓋。內觀智的功能就是為了清除這些遮蔽。佛陀教導五蘊是無常法

(anicca dhamma),這是由能夠觀見者所說。無明、貪、瞋、癡,這些法都遮蓋著它。

舉個譬喻:月亮本來就存在,但看不見是因為雲層遮蓋。你要用內觀智把它吹散。這個譬喻正說明這件事。若你看得慢,表示你的煩惱厚重。修行四正勤 (sammappadhāna),煩惱被吹散後,你就會見到無常。(即是四正斷)

那麼,內觀智什麼時候才會結束呢?當無常的現象讓你生起厭離、不喜見,這仍是內觀智。當你以法眼見到它們是苦諦(dukkha sacca)時,就快要結束了。這並不是你想結束就能結束的事。當它真的要結束時,無常現象將消失。此時,內觀智與道智相遇。

這裡是八正道圓滿的階段。不再見到無常,而是見到沒有無常的狀態——涅槃。 內觀智轉化為道智。內觀智是打開「煩惱之蓋」的智慧;而道智則是打開「有 為無常之蓋」的智慧。這些要點非常重要,而後你將見到涅槃。這些對禪修者 來說都非常關鍵。

即便僅僅能夠打開煩惱的遮蓋,這已經非常好了。這一點是對禪修者而言最重要的。打開煩惱的遮蔽之後,會見到無常;但無常仍然遮蔽著涅槃。所以必須修行,讓內觀智成熟。當道智生起時,無常的遮蔽被打開,你將會見到無為法(asaṅkhata)。

這裡所說的只有這兩種智慧。你對此是否滿足?首先,重要的是要見到無常。 打開煩惱的遮蓋,就會見到無常。因此,定力(samādhi)是非常重要的。而接 著打開無常的遮蔽,將會見到無為——涅槃。

關於內觀修行

1961年9月1日至2日

T1

五蘊從何而來?它有其原因。它來自渴愛(taṇhā)。有了對象,渴愛就會生起。 它有很多對象。有六種對象(色、聲······法)。從情感中,渴愛生起。 對自己最親愛的東西是我們自己的五蘊。有了對自己的情感,我們就得到了五蘊。有了五蘊,我們就有衰老、疾病和死亡。在內觀修行中,我們必須觀照我們最心愛的五蘊。在內觀修行中使用四念處。

身、受、心、法都在五蘊中。不需要全部觀照。我只用心來向您展示。透過心的觀照,其他三個也包括在內。我將談論觀照。我們有我心的身份認同觀——有身見(sakkāya diṭṭhì)。

對心的錯誤觀點比其他(五蘊)更多。想要成為入流者,首先觀照心。這是為了切斷邪見。佛陀說我們把心當作我的。因此,我們用錯誤的觀點和渴愛執著於它。

因此,我們得到了帶有衰老、疾病和死亡的五蘊。這就像一種混有毒藥的酒精飲料。我們不知道它,帶著情感喝了它,不得不死亡。佛陀教導我們觀照心為無常、苦、無我、疾病和危險。

佛陀教導了不同的方法。觀照無常也能完成任務。如果您不觀照,將其視為常、 樂、我、健康和安全,就會對它產生情感。有了情感,您就會得到五蘊,並遇 到衰老、疾病和死亡的危險。

有多少種心?您必須仔細記下它,因為您會回去。(這些在家信徒是新的瑜伽士,從下緬甸來到尊者的指導下修行。)心並不多。①見(識)②聽③嗅④嚐⑤身體上的不愉快識。例如,癢、疼痛和酸痛等。⑥身體上的愉快識。這些是六種外在的客心;在外在生起。

在内在,①貪婪②憎恨③迷惑的心④不貪婪(想要給予)⑤不憎恨(愛、慈悲)。這些在內在生起。因此,有五種內在的客心。無癡是不迷惑,所以不包括在這裡。(這是觀照的心。)

有兩種主心:吸氣心和呼氣心。不要採取物理空氣。採取心;想要吸氣和呼氣的心。這是心隨觀(cittānupassanā),不能採取氣元素。

無癡(amoha)不僅僅是一個,而是有五個因素:①正見②正思維③正念④正精進⑤正定。這些是五個道支(maggans)。如果見、聽等生起,觀照它的無常。觀照為無常。觀照任何生起的事物。在整個身體上,它會在任何地方生起。

有時貪婪、憤怒和躁動的心生起。任何生起的都只有一個。用五個道支(即無癡)觀照它們。透過觀照,它們成為道支。這就是它的意思,您得到了道支。

例如,貪婪生起,您觀察它。然後它就不在了。它是無常的。(兩個心不能同時生起。當觀察的心進來時,貪婪就不再存在。)觀照的心是道。無常和道 (無常/道)必須保持一致(一個接一個,不要讓其他煩惱在它們之間出現)。

在生起時,觀照它。如果沒有任何生起,只需觀照主心(吸氣和呼氣的心)。如果無常/道保持一致,我性(身份認同觀)就不會在它們之間出現。如果沒有觀照生起的法,渴愛和邪見就會隨之而來。有了它們,您就會得到五蘊。有了五蘊,衰老和死亡就會隨之而來。

透過觀照來切斷渴愛、衰老和死亡。觀照的心可以稱為無癡或正見。透過觀照,渴愛和邪見消失。當執著(渴愛)和錯誤的觀點(邪見執取)消失時,五蘊就不會生起。不做修行是不可能的。如果您沒有食物可吃,沒關係。但您必須修行。

正見和正思維是內觀。正念、正精進和正定是止觀。因此,這是止觀的觀照。知道生起是正念。您知道它,因為您有正定。您正在努力,所以您知道它。因此,它包括止觀。知道這些法是不穩定的。這是般若知道它。將正念和般若指向無常是止觀。不要單獨建立止觀。

佛陀教導了三種方法:①先止觀,然後是內觀,②先內觀,然後是止觀,③止 觀一起。現在我教您止觀一起。為什麼?其他人是分開修行,需要更長的時間。 您的壽命很短。

因此,將它們結合起來是好的。如果知道每個生起的法,正定就會知道它。如果知道每個消逝的法,內觀就會知道它。因此,透過知道無常,它們在一起。透過看到生起的法,斷見消失。透過看到消逝的法,常見消失。透過看到它們兩者,有身見消失。透過看到它們兩者,知道它不是我和我所。因此,身份認同觀消失。三種錯誤的觀點消失。隨著邪見和渴愛的消失,切斷輪迴。這個道正在切斷它。渴愛和五蘊的止息是涅槃。衰老和死亡的止息是涅槃。

在觀照中,無常和道必須保持一致。不要讓其他法在它們之間出現。不要讓貪婪、憎恨等出現。如果它們出現,就無法在七天內證悟涅槃。如果沒有它們,即使在早上修行,也能在晚上證悟。(這些在《念處經》中提到。)如果認知無常,並且您有三善根(三因人),您將在此生證悟涅槃。

有十種煩惱(貪婪、憎恨、迷惑、我慢、錯誤的觀點、懷疑、昏沉、躁動、無 慚、無愧)。如果您可以讓無常/道保持一致,它們都無法進入。增加您的精進。 以這種方式在早上修行,晚上就能證悟。這些都是佛陀教導的。 如果您在知識(ñāṇa)方面很敏銳,您就會成功。如果它很弱,則需要七天。如果非常弱,則需要更長的時間。這取決於您的智力。在知道修行方法後,重要的是不要讓煩惱進入。增加您的正念、正定、正精進,它就無法進入。如果您認知無常,第一階段就成功了。然後繼續觀照。

無常是自己的死亡。一段時間後,產生厭離。隨著厭離,發展到第二階段。您不需要問別人。您們都必須回去,所以我會向您解釋到過程的結束。即使您對這個過程感到厭離,也必須繼續觀照。

即使不願意,也要盡力去做。將發展到第三階段。您在您的知識中將它們視為苦諦。這是發展到第三階段。如果您們徹底了解它們是苦諦,它們都會消失。這是看到涅槃的知識。

八個道支完成。所有的行法止息。智力看到行法的止息。行法的止息意味著五 蘊消失。成為入流者。之後,果智生起。之後,回顧知識出現。

錯誤觀點的根消失,沒有更多的五蘊去惡趣。您證悟了第一個涅槃。如果您想證悟第二個涅槃,請回到十三個觀照對象。您將看到無常、它們的厭離和結束。更高的道智也是如此。沒有其他特殊的法。

T2

佛陀教導了兩種知識:內觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)和道智(magga ñāṇa)。除了看到五蘊的無常,內觀智看不到其他東西。內觀智有五個道支。作為知識,它只有一個。那是正見。

在認知無常期間,其他四個因素也包括在內。內觀智觀察五蘊,不看其他東西, 只看生起和消逝。去問問修行的瑜伽士。他會回答您說看到生起和消逝。看不 到心、感受等,只看到生起和消逝。然後可以斷定您得到了內觀智。

看到生起和消逝的法,在此生將獲得解脫。唯一的存在只有這個。身體、感受等僅作為名稱存在。如果您看到這一點,您就有了正見;而如果您沒有看到這一點,您還沒有到達這裡。內觀智是看到行和無常(有條件的現象和無常)。

較低的知識看到五蘊。因此,它們有很大的不同。看到身體、感受等是較低的知識。這是名色分別智(nāma-rūpapariggaha ñāṇa)——分辨身心。在《尼陀那品相應》中,佛陀只教導須尸摩兩種證悟涅槃的知識。

這些是內觀智和道智。需要解釋得更清楚。瑜伽士如何看待它?如果看到無常, 那就是內觀智。不要將其與生滅智、壞滅智等混淆。將所有這些知識結合起來 就是內觀智。

壽命短暫,為了證悟涅槃,只需嘗試這兩種知識。內觀智是涅槃的先驅知識。 它在之前清除煩惱。涅槃存在,但看不到是煩惱的原因。涅槃始終存在於修行 的人。

我們為什麼看不到它?它被煩惱所覆蓋。如果您說您正在觀照,但仍然看不到 它。如果無法透過觀照看到行的無常,它仍然被煩惱所覆蓋。五蘊堆積著無常。

它不存在是因為您看不到它,還是因為它被煩惱所覆蓋?是被它們覆蓋的原因。 內觀智正在清除這些東西。佛陀教導五蘊是無常法。這是一個認知它的人說的。 無知、貪婪、憎恨和迷惑,所有這些法都在覆蓋它。

舉個例子,月亮始終存在,看不到是因為被雲層遮擋。您必須用內觀智將其吹走。這就像這個比喻。如果慢慢認知它,您的煩惱就很厚。用四正勤(sammappadhānā)修行,煩惱被吹走,您會看到無常(與四正精進相同)。

內觀智何時結束?如果無常讓您感到厭惡和厭離,它仍然是內觀智。將它們視為苦諦,它就會結束。它無法透過您的欲望結束。如果它即將結束,無常就會消失。它會遇到道智。

這裡完成了八個道支。看不到無常,而是看到沒有它們的涅槃。內觀智轉變為 道智。內觀智打開煩惱的覆蓋。道智打開有為無常的覆蓋。這些點非常重要。 然後您會看到涅槃。這些對瑜伽士很重要。

即使現在可以打開煩惱的覆蓋也很好。這是瑜伽士最重要的點。透過打開煩惱的覆蓋,遇到無常。無常再次覆蓋涅槃。因此,必須修行並使內觀智成熟。當道智生起時,無常的覆蓋被打開,您會遇到無為。

只有這些知識。您對此感到滿意嗎?首先,看到無常很重要。透過打開煩惱的 覆蓋,您會看到無常。因此,正定很重要。無常的覆蓋再次被打開,您會看到 無為——涅槃。

Wrong View on Kamma

21st and 22nd September 1961

If you can contemplate the five khandhas as these are not me, not I am and not mine, craving, conceit and wrong views will fall away. And if you discern impermanence, there is no "I", "I am" or "mine" to be found. The Buddha in the Dhammapada and other suttas taught us as kamma actions - were following like a shadow (wholesome actions as a shadow, and unwholesome actions as a cart following the ox).

Therefore, we had to rely on kammas like father and mother. So most Buddhists are thinking that kamma not perish. Influence by craving for becoming bhāva-taṇhā, when someone hears the five khandhas are not-self and rely on kamma as stable (In the Puṇṇama sutta, a monk was listening to the Buddha's teaching on anatta and thought like this).

If the Buddha taught people directly as kamma was impermanent and they would take it as without result. Therefore, he taught them with similes as it followed like a shadow, etc. Kamma is also impermanent, dukkha and anatta. It's volition—cetanā. Cetanā is saṅkhārakkhandha—aggregate of volitional formation. It's arising and passing away, so it can't follow.

If you take it as following you, it becomes eternal view—sassata diṭṭhi. The monk in the sutta had bhāva-taṇhā—craving for becoming. And when the Buddha said the khandhas were not-self and became fear of without an experience. So he took kamma as self (atta) because he didn't appreciate anatta. Therefore, Buddhists have sassata view on kamma.

There is the kammic energy or power leaving behind for the result, but it can't follow. Therefore, the Buddha had to talk about its result. Taking the simile as directly will misinterpret the Buddha. It becomes wrong view if we don't know how to teach and also interpret it (These two ways of teaching can be found in the Aṅguttara Nikāya).

If don't know how to interpret it and the preacher has wrong view first and later the listeners. Therefore, giving talks are not easy. Taking kamma with wrong view is not a small matter. The whole country has this view; taking the kammassakatā ñāṇa with wrong view. This knowledge can't dispel wrong view.

For an example, I do it so I get it. But it becomes uccheda view if taking kamma as fruitless or no result. For this reason, the Buddha taught it with similes. The reason for it can't follow is; after death the conscious mind and body cease here. Because of the kammic energy, next mind and body arise.

The mind and body are neither the same one nor a different one. But they have cause and effect connection. From here (this side), not a piece of it follow there (the other side). The old one ceases and the new one arises.

I have to talk about this because everyone makes mistake with this matter. (Sayadaw retold the Puṇṇama Sutta on the view of kamma) Why we get the khandhas again? Because of the wanting mind we get back the khandhas. You don't get it if you don't want. "Volition-kamma was permanent—(nicca). Except volition all others were impermanent (anicca)".

The monk in the sutta took it this way. This is called ekicca sassata diṭṭhi—partly eternity and partly non-eternity view. The Buddha said someone couldn't realize Nibbāna if he had one of the wrong views; because his mind is not clear and confused.

I don't want to speak about the views of Christians and Mohammedans (Muslims). This is the wrong view of Buddhists. A black spot on a white sheet; it's like a shadow following a person. The five khandhas of human being are mind and matter. And the shadow is kamma.

The shadow is permanent. Contemplate volition as impermanence and taṇhā dies. Cetanā (volition) is including in the sabbe dhammā anattā—all dhamma are not self. Again kamma not follows a being and it falls into uccheda diṭṭhi. Have to

understand the sutta teaching as indirect way and to understand directly is the Abhidhamma teachings. It's anantarapaccayo—proximity condition.

Between the cause and effect, no other things exist. This side is kamma and the other side is result. This side of kamma has ceased here, giving the same kammic result of the kamma on the other side. It's not following to the other side, but giving the same kammic result. If you know kamma is not following to the other side, and sassata view dies away. Again, knowing as giving the same result on that side, and uccheda view dies away. In this way, two wrong views fall away.

錯解業的觀念

1961年9月21日至22日

若你能觀照五蘊為:這不是我、我不是它、它不是我的,那麼愛、慢與邪見將會滅除;若你能觀察無常,就找不到「我」、「我是」或「我的」可言。《法句經》與其他經典中,佛陀曾教導說業(kamma)如影隨形地跟著我們(善業如影隨形,惡業如牛車緊隨耕牛)。

因此,人們必須依賴業,如同依賴父母一般。正因如此,大多數佛教徒認為業是永不壞滅的。這是受「有愛」(bhāva-taṇhā)的影響——渴望有與成為——當有人聽聞五蘊是無我,卻轉而依賴業為穩固的依靠。(在《滿月經》(Puṇnama Sutta)中,有一位比丘聽佛說無我之法時,就是這麼想的。)

若佛陀直接教導業是無常的,人們會錯誤地認為它是沒有結果的。是以佛陀以譬喻開示,例如業如影隨形等。實際上,業也是無常、苦、無我。業即是「意」(cetanā),屬於行蘊(saṅkhārakkhandha),它是生起又滅去的法,因此並不能真地「跟隨」什麼。

若你認為它會追隨你,那就成為了「常見」(sassata diṭṭhi)。經中的比丘有「有愛」,當佛陀說五蘊是無我,他就害怕「沒有經驗」可得,於是轉而執取業為我(attā),因他無法接受「無我」。因此,佛教徒對業多有常見。

事實上,業只留下一股業力、能生果的勢力,但它本身並不跟隨而去。佛陀為了使人們明白這點而談論業果,若將譬喻理解為字面,將會誤解佛法。若不懂得如何傳達與詮釋佛法,首先傳法者即墮入邪見,隨後聽聞者亦然。故演說佛法實非易事。

將業視為「跟隨」的觀念是一種大錯。整個國家幾乎都持這種觀念,把業報智 (kammassakatā ñāṇa)與邪見混在一起。這樣的「知業果」之知無法破除邪見。

例如:我造業,我得果。但若認為業沒有果報,就成為了「斷見」(uccheda diṭṭhi)。因此,佛陀才用譬喻來開示。說業不能跟隨的原因在於:一個人死時,心與身就在此處滅去。因業的力量,下一個心與身在另一處生起。

這個心身與彼個心身既非完全相同,也非全然不同,而是有因果相繫。從這一邊(今生)看過去,沒有任何一部分真的「跟著去」彼邊(來世)。舊的滅去,新的牛起。

我之所以談這個,是因為大家幾乎都在此事上犯錯。(尊者在此重述了《滿月經》中對業的錯誤理解)為何我們會再得一個五蘊?因為有「想要」的心,我們又再次得到了五蘊。若無欲求,自然就不會再得它。

「意一一業一一是恆常的(nicca),除了意以外,其他一切皆是無常的(anicca)。」——這是經中那位比丘的觀點。這稱為「一部分是常見,一部分是無常見」(ekicca sassata diṭṭhi)。佛陀說,若有一種邪見在心,便無法證得涅槃,因為那顆心混亂、混濁。

我不打算討論基督徒與回教徒的觀念。這是佛教徒自身的邪見。如同一張白布上的一點黑漬——比喻中「如影隨形的黑影」,人身五蘊即是名色,而影子是指業。

人們把影子視為恆常的。若觀照「意」為無常,貪愛就會滅。意(cetanā)是屬於「一切法無我」(sabbe dhammā anattā)之一。再次說明,業並不會跟著一個有情去另一世,否則便會墮入斷見(uccheda diṭṭhi)。必須以「譬喻」來理解經文,以「直接意」來理解阿毘達摩的教義。這是所謂的「無間緣」(anantarapaccayo)。

在因與果之間,並無其他東西存在。此側是業,彼側是果。此側的業已滅,而彼側生起相同的業果。不是「跟著去」彼方,而是生起了相應的業果。若你了解業不是「跟著去」,則常見(sassata)即滅;若你了解業會生起相應之果,斷見(uccheda)亦滅。如此,兩種邪見俱斷。

對業力的錯誤觀點

1961年9月21日至22日

如果您可以觀照五蘊,認為它們不是我,不是我是,也不是我的,那麼渴愛、 我慢和錯誤的觀點就會消失。如果您認知無常,就找不到「我」、「我是」或 「我的」。佛陀在《法句經》和其他經文中教導我們,業力行為就像影子一樣 跟隨(善業像影子,惡業像牛拉車一樣跟隨)。

因此,我們必須像依靠父母一樣依靠業力。所以大多數佛教徒都認為業力不會 消逝。受到欲求成為(bhāva-taṇhā)的影響,當有人聽到五蘊是無我,並將業 力視為穩定時(在《滿月經》中,一位比丘聽佛陀教導無我,就是這樣想的)。

如果佛陀直接教導人們業力是無常的,他們會認為它沒有結果。因此,他用比喻教導他們,就像影子一樣跟隨等等。業力也是無常、苦和無我的。它是意志(cetanā)。意志是行蘊(saṅkhārakkhandha)——意志形成的聚合。它是生起和消逝的,所以它無法跟隨。

如果您認為它跟隨您,它就變成了常見(sassata diṭṭhi)。經文中的比丘有欲求成為(bhāva-taṇhā)。當佛陀說五蘊是無我時,他害怕沒有經驗。因此,他將業力視為自我(atta),因為他不欣賞無我。因此,佛教徒對業力有常見。

業力能量或力量留下結果,但它無法跟隨。因此,佛陀不得不談論它的結果。 直接採用比喻會誤解佛陀。如果我們不知道如何教導和解釋它,就會變成錯誤 的觀點(這兩種教導方式都可以在《增支部》中找到)。

如果不知道如何解釋它,傳道者首先有錯誤的觀點,然後是聽眾。因此,發表演講並不容易。用錯誤的觀點看待業力不是一件小事。整個國家都有這種觀點;用錯誤的觀點看待業果智(kammassakatā ñāṇa)。這種知識無法消除錯誤的觀點。

舉個例子,我做所以我得到。但如果將業力視為沒有結果,它就變成了斷見 (uccheda view)。因此,佛陀用比喻教導它。它無法跟隨的原因是;死後,意 識身心在這裡停止。由於業力能量,下一個身心生起。

身心既不是同一個,也不是不同的。但它們有因果關係。從這裡(這一邊),沒有一塊跟隨到那裡(另一邊)。舊的停止,新的生起。

我必須談論這個,因為每個人都會在這個問題上犯錯。(尊者重述了《滿月經》關於業力觀點的內容)我們為什麼再次得到五蘊?因為我們想要的心,我

們才得到五蘊。如果您不想要,您就不會得到它。「意志業是永恆的 (nicca)。除了意志,所有其他都是無常的(anicca)」。

經文中的比丘就是這樣認為的。這被稱為部分永恆和部分非永恆的觀點 (ekicca sassata diṭṭhi)。佛陀說,如果一個人有任何錯誤的觀點,他就無法證 悟涅槃;因為他的心不清晰和困惑。

我不想談論基督徒和穆罕默德(穆斯林)的觀點。這是佛教徒的錯誤觀點。白紙上的黑點;它就像跟隨一個人的影子。人的五蘊是身心。影子是業力。

影子是永恆的。觀照意志是無常的,渴愛就會消失。意志(cetanā)包含在一切法無我(sabbe dhammā anattā)中。再次,業力不跟隨一個眾生,它就陷入斷見。必須將經文的教導理解為間接的方式,而直接理解是阿毗達摩的教導。它是近因(anantarapaccayo)。

在因果之間,沒有其他事物存在。這一邊是業力,另一邊是結果。這一邊的業力在這裡停止,在另一邊給出相同的業力結果。它不是跟隨到另一邊,而是給出相同的業力結果。如果您知道業力不跟隨到另一邊,常見就會消失。再次,知道在另一邊給出相同的結果,斷見就會消失。這樣,兩種錯誤的觀點就會消失。

The Source of Great Sufferings

4th October 1961

The Buddha urged us to destroy the source of hell root, the identity view—sakkāya diṭṭhi. Many types of mind arise with conditions. We take them as my mind. Whatever of the arising mind, don't take it as I-making. Desiring to eat something arises is a type of mind arises. Desiring to sleep arises is a type of mind arises, etc.

Whatever state of mind arises, making note of them as in the same way if you know them as arising with their own matters. And it becomes evidence that these are not me and not mine. It's the most important for the me and the mine to fall away. If the me falls away, wrong view—diṭṭhi is falling away. If mine falls away, the craving —taṇhā is falling away. If you ask, "How we do it?" Every time mind arises, you must know it as not me, but only mind arises by conditions. If you know every mind arises, wrong view falls off. What I am saying now is easy. With yourself and you forget it (not knowing or lost mindfulness when it arises).

When the desire to sleep arises, it becomes I want to sleep. Don't mix with the me. Simply know it as a sleepy mind arises. If you mix it up, it become wrong view. In you only one mind after one mind is arising.

If you know them as such, it becomes insight for dispelling wrong view. This is not the insight of anicca and dukkha, but a person or a being disappears. I'll dispel your doubt later. Now it's still in the stage of dispelling the identity view. It still needs to dispel eternal view and view of annihilation.

Note these points carefully. Only a Buddha had arisen into this world and had the chances to hear about it (Except a Buddha, nobody can teach them. So, wrong views are very deep rooted in every living being. Therefore, the Buddha said the permanent homes of living beings were the woeful planes).

If you are making something which is not me as me and it'll connect things. How does it connect? You are making other things as my son, my wife, etc. The disease of wrong views will develop. You are thinking the arising phenomenon is me and the other thing as mine. Note them seriously.

Because of this, killing father and mother, cheating and deceiving others and people's belongings, etc. and all unwholesome dhammas develop from wrong views. So we have to destroy them first. It's true as the source of hells. I am worrying all of you will fall into hells and helping you to cut off this root. After craving to eat taṇhā arises, the big taṇhā of clinging arises as I can't control without it.

There are two kinds of taṇhā: taṇhā of thinking and clinging. After that, it's the task effort-kamma. These three things exist everywhere (i.e., without contemplation). ① Taṇhā paccaya ② upādāna paccaya ③ kamma-bhāva paccaya jāti. Paccaya means condition. Without any condition, nothing can arise.

I am explaining clearly. These three points are main factors. Have to remember these three points. From all the six senses-doors, these three points are in line. Paccaya means the cause condition. The result is without break. In the process of taṇhā paccaya upādāna, after taṇhā ceases, upādāna arises.

Why taṇhā has to cease? Paccaya is the cause and which cause? The cause of the dhamma which has ceased before (here is taṇhā). With the condition of taṇhā, upādāna arises. After taṇhā has ceased, leaves the cause of condition behind. So taṇhā has ceased but let upādāna arises. This is nothing do with reciting by heart of the text. Taṇhā has the cause. It has the cause to let upādāna arises.

Isn't arising automatically? All our minds processes are going on like this, by the front causes. The front cause and the after result have connection. In this way, it's free from uccheda view. Cause and effect are not annihilated. Uccheda means annihilated. You may think with the contemplation of anicca, dukkha and anatta, it will realize Nibbāna. If hindered by this wrong view can't realize it. After clearing it away, will realize it. And if not, you could not realize it.

In the time of the Buddha, some monks couldn't realize Nibbāna without clearing away these views and practicing because it was hindered by wrong views. Even though taṇhā has ceased, leaving the power behind and the result of upādāna

arises. From the time of you know these things, not go to painful birth (According to some of Sayadaw's talks only for next one or two lives. Especially for his lay followers listened to his talks every day.)

This is not a small power. You are free from identity and eternal views if you discern the passing away dhamma (i.e., impermanent). Although taṇhā has passed away and seeing upādāna arises and free from uccheda view.

Every time knowing the arising dhamma and free from sakkāya diṭṭhi. ① Every time knowing the passing away dhamma and free from sassata diṭṭhi. ② Every time knowing the continuous dhamma and free from uccheda diṭṭhi. ③

So every time seeing impermanence free from three wrong views $(\mathbb{O}, \mathbb{O}, \mathbb{O})$.

I'll continue to talk about it if you are not clear because it's the seed of hell. It's not kamma which sends you there. Diṭṭhi—wrong view, sends you there: taking taṇhā as me, upādāna as me, and kamma as me.

There is no me but you take it as me and falling into there (hells). But you are thinking that unwholesome dhammas send beings there. It's by the order of wrong views. Kamma can't do anything after ditthi is destroyed.

(Sayadaw gave the simile of the judge—diṭṭhi, and the executioner-kamma). Therefore, diṭṭhi is more fearful than kamma. But you all are afraid of kamma. In the suttas the Buddha said that freedom from the painful destinations (apāyabhūmi) was abandoning of diṭṭhi and doubt. He did not mention the abandoning of kamma but you all are talking as by kamma.

(Identity view itself cannot send beings to painful births. But it is the source of all wrong views to arise. With wrong views being are easier to create unwholesome actions which can send beings to painful births.)

巨大苦之根源

1961年10月4日

佛陀曾強調我們應該摧毀地獄之根——身見(sakkāya diṭṭhi)。種種心識皆是依緣而生,我們卻錯認它們為「我的心」。無論生起什麼樣的心,都不要執取為「我」。例如,想吃東西的欲望生起,那是一種心;想睡覺的心生起,那也是一種心。

無論什麼心生起,只要如實地知覺那是它自己的事實,便能作為「這不是我、這不是我的」的證據。讓「我」與「我的」的錯誤認知崩解,是最重要的事。如果「我」滅除,則斷見(diṭṭhi)滅除;若「我的」滅除,則貪愛(taṇhā)也隨之滅除。

那麼,我們該怎麼做呢?每當心生起時,要如實知覺:「不是我,這只是依緣而生的心。」若能每次都這樣覺知,則身見就會瓦解。我現在所說的話聽起來容易,實際上你自己經歷時卻會忘記它(即在心生起時失去正念)。

例如,當「想睡」的心生起時,我們會說「我想睡了」。這時就是混合了 「我」的錯覺。其實只是「睡意」的心生起而已。若加上「我」的概念,就成 了身見。在你的經驗中,其實只是心一個接一個地生起而已。

若能如實觀察心是這樣一個接一個地生滅,就能生起遺除身見的觀智。這還不是觀無常苦空無我之智,但它讓「人」與「眾生」的錯誤認知消失。對於疑惑的地方,我會再解釋。現在我們還在破除身見階段,接下來還得破除常見與斷見。

請仔細記下這些重點。唯有佛陀出現於世時,我們才有機會聽聞這些法(除了佛陀之外,沒有人能教導這些;所以,邪見深植於一切眾生的心中。正如佛陀所說,眾生的常住處是四惡道。)

若錯將非我之法認作「我」,就會產生執著與連結。如何連結呢?你會將他人當作「我的兒子」、「我的妻子」等等,邪見之病便會滋長。將生起的法執為「我」,再將其他事物視為「我的」,請你們記清這一點。

正因如此,才會出現弒父弒母、欺詐、掠奪等不善法,這一切都根源於邪見。因此我們必須先摧毀邪見,它確實是通往地獄的根源。我之所以如此苦口婆心,是因為我擔心你們會墮入地獄,所以才幫助你們斬斷這個根源。

貪欲生起後,隨即生起執著的強烈貪愛,讓你無法自制地非得擁有它不可。這 裡有兩種貪愛:一是「思惟上的貪愛」,二是「執取的貪愛」。接下來是「行 為上的業行(kamma)」。這三者處處存在(若沒有觀照的話):

- ① 因貪愛而起(taṇhā paccaya)
- ② 因執取而起(upādāna paccaya)
- ③ 因業的造作而生(kamma-bhava paccaya jāti)

「paccaya」意即「條件、因緣」。沒有條件,任何法都無法生起。我現在正清楚地解釋這一點,請記住這三個要點。從六根門中,這三個條件是接續而來的。

在「貪愛為緣、執取生起」的過程中,是在貪愛已滅後,執取才生起。為什麼 貪愛會先滅?因為「條件」意味著前一法已滅,留下一個條件,讓下一法得以 生起。因此,貪愛雖已滅,但仍留下緣,令執取生起。這不是背誦經典的事, 而是如實觀察之結果。貪愛有其條件,這個條件會引發執取的生起。

是否是自動生起的呢?我們的心過程皆是如此,都是由前因引發後果。前因與後果之間有關聯。如此才能免於斷見(uccheda diṭṭhi),即否定因果關係的錯見。「斷見」意指否定一切因果。

你可能認為,只要觀照無常、苦、無我就能證涅槃。但若被邪見所障礙,是無 法證得的。必須先破除這些錯見,否則即使修行,也不能證果。

在佛世,有些比丘即使修行,也無法證得涅槃,就是因為未能破除邪見。即使貪愛已滅,卻因其所留的勢力,而令執取生起。

從你開始明白這些之後,將不會再墮入惡趣(根據尊者其他開示,此法對於日常聽法的在家弟子來說,有效於今生與下一生)。

這並非微小的力量。若你觀察生滅的現象,就能免於身見與常見。雖然貪愛已滅,卻見執取生起,便能免於斷見。

每次覺知法的生起,即免於身見。 每次覺知法的滅去,即免於常見。 每次覺知法的相續,即免於斷見。 因此,每次見到無常,即可免除這三種邪見(①、②、③)。

若你仍然不清楚,我會繼續講解,因為這是通往地獄的種子。不是業把你送進地獄,而是邪見送你進去。錯把貪愛、執取與業認作「我」,就會墮落。

事實上並無「我」,但你卻執取為「我」,所以才會墮落於地獄。你們以為是不善業讓眾生墮落,其實是邪見在背後指揮。若邪見被破除,業也無法左右你。

(尊者舉了比喻:邪見如審判官,業如劊子手。)因此,邪見比業更可怕。但你們都只怕業而不怕邪見。在經典中,佛陀說:「解脫於惡趣,是因斷除邪見與疑惑。」他並未說是因斷除業。而你們卻總是說是由於業。

(身見本身不會直接導致墮入惡趣,但它是其他邪見的根源。有了邪見,人就 更容易造作不善行,而這些不善行才會將眾生送入惡趣。)

大苦之源

1961年10月4日

佛陀敦促我們摧毀地獄之根源,有身見(sakkāya diṭṭhi)。許多種類的心隨著條件而生起。我們將它們視為我的心。任何生起的心,都不要將其視為我造作。想要吃東西生起是一種心生起。想要睡覺生起是一種心生起,等等。

任何心態生起,都以同樣的方式記錄它們,如果您知道它們是隨著自己的事情而生起。這就成為證據,證明這些不是我,也不是我的。我和我的消失是最重要的。如果我消失,邪見(diṭṭhi)就會消失。如果我的消失,渴愛(taṇhā)就會消失。如果您問:「我們如何做到這一點?」每次心生起,您都必須知道它不是我,而是只有心隨著條件而生起。如果您知道每個心生起,邪見就會消失。我現在說的話很容易。您自己會忘記它(當它生起時,不知道或失去正念)。

當想睡覺的欲望生起時,它就變成我想睡覺。不要與我混淆。只需知道它是一個想睡覺的心生起。如果您將其混淆,它就會變成錯誤的觀點。在您之中,只有一個心接著一個心生起。

如果您知道它們是這樣的,它就會成為消除錯誤觀點的洞察力。這不是無常和苦的洞察力,而是一個人或一個眾生消失。我稍後會消除您的疑慮。現在它仍處於消除有身見的階段。它仍然需要消除常見和斷見。

仔細記住這些要點。只有佛陀才會降生於這個世界,才有機會聽到這些(除了佛陀,沒有人可以教導它們。因此,錯誤的觀點在每個眾生中根深蒂固。因此,佛陀說眾生的永久住所是惡趣)。

如果您將不是我的東西當作我,它就會連接事物。它是如何連接的?您將其他 事物當作我的兒子、我的妻子等等。錯誤觀點的疾病將會發展。您認為生起的 現象是我,而其他事物是我的。認真記錄它們。

正因為如此,殺害父母、欺騙和欺騙他人和人們的財產等等,所有不善法都從錯誤的觀點發展而來。因此,我們必須首先摧毀它們。它是地獄之源是真實的。我擔心你們所有人會墮入地獄,並幫助您切斷這個根。在想要吃東西的渴愛生起後,執著的大渴愛生起,因為我沒有它就無法控制。

有兩種渴愛:思考的渴愛和執著的渴愛。之後,是任務努力業。這三件事無處 不在(即沒有觀照)。①渴愛緣②執取緣③業有緣生。緣意味著條件。沒有任 何條件,什麼都不能生起。

我正在清楚地解釋。這三點是主要因素。必須記住這三點。從所有六個感官門, 這三點都是一致的。緣意味著原因條件。結果是沒有間斷的。在渴愛緣執取的 過程中,在渴愛停止後,執取生起。

為什麼渴愛必須停止?緣是原因,什麼原因?之前停止的法的原因(這裡是渴愛)。在渴愛的條件下,執取生起。在渴愛停止後,留下條件的原因。因此,渴愛已經停止,但讓執取生起。這與背誦經文無關。渴愛有原因。它有讓執取生起的原因。

它不是自動生起的嗎?我們所有的心靈過程都像這樣,由前面的原因進行。前面的原因和後面的結果有聯繫。這樣,它就擺脫了斷見。因果沒有被消滅。斷滅意味著被消滅。您可能會認為透過觀照無常、苦和無我,它會證悟涅槃。如果被這個錯誤的觀點阻礙,就無法證悟它。在清除它之後,就會證悟它。如果沒有,您就無法證悟它。

在佛陀的時代,一些比丘沒有清除這些觀點和修行就無法證悟涅槃,因為它被錯誤的觀點阻礙了。即使渴愛已經停止,留下後面的力量,執取的結果也會生起。從您知道這些事情的時候起,就不會去痛苦的出生(根據尊者的一些開示,僅限於接下來的一兩生。特別是對於每天聽他開示的在家信徒)。

這不是一個小的力量。如果您認知消逝的法(即無常),您就會擺脫身份認同和常見。儘管渴愛已經消逝,看到執取生起,並擺脫斷見。

每次知道生起的法,都擺脫有身見。①每次知道消逝的法,都擺脫常見。②每次知道連續的法,都擺脫斷見。③

因此,每次看到無常,都擺脫三種錯誤的觀點(①、②、③)。

如果您不清楚,我會繼續談論它,因為它是地獄的種子。不是業力將您送到那裡。邪見(diṭṭhi)將您送到那裡:將渴愛視為我,將執取視為我,將業力視為我。

沒有我,但您將其視為我,並墮入那裡(地獄)。但您認為不善法將眾生送到那裡。這是由錯誤觀點的順序決定的。在邪見被摧毀後,業力無法做任何事情。

(尊者舉了法官(邪見)和劊子手(業力)的比喻)。因此,邪見比業力更可怕。但你們都害怕業力。在經文中,佛陀說擺脫痛苦的目的地(惡趣)是放棄邪見和懷疑。他沒有提到放棄業力,但你們都在談論業力。

(身份認同觀本身無法將眾生送到痛苦的出生。但它是所有錯誤觀點生起的根源。有了錯誤的觀點,眾生更容易造作不善的行為,從而將眾生送到痛苦的出生。)

The Importance of Anicca

(no date)

You all have been listened to dhammas (Suññātā dhammas, sacca dhammas etc.). You understand them, and also have seen impermanence. With the cessation of contact (phassa) and feeling (vedanā) ceases. For example, bitten by mosquito and become itchy. Bitten by mosquito is contact and itchy is feeling.

Phassa paccaya vedanā—contact conditions feeling. No mosquito bites you and the itch also ceases. Phassa nirodha vedanā nirodho—with the cessation of contact and feeling also ceases. With the cause conditions and result arises. With the cause ceases and the result also ceases.

You have to understand these things without any doubt. Then your wrong view falls away. You don't need to be afraid of it even though you die with the painful feelings—dukkha vedanā because wrong views and doubt fall away during your practice. You get the purification of view and doubt (diṭṭhivisuddhi and kankhāvitarana visuddhi).

It falls away with the insight knowledge but still not with the Path Knowledge yet. When you are seeing impermanence, the body not disappears. Only with the cessation of impermanence and the body will disappear. Wrong view and doubt are the two dhammas send beings to painful births.

Therefore, I advise you to die courageously near death (i.e., discerning impermanence with practice). Yesterday talk I was leaving this point. So today I am adding it here. (Yesterday Sayadaw gave a talk based on the Sotanugati sutta of Aṅguttara Nikāya.)

Today I'll continue to talk from the Saṃyutta Nikāya. Why did the Buddha enter into parinibbāna (i.e., passing away)? Because his direct disciples were not left anymore. (i.e., Buddha's Vineyya) (They were from the Pañcavaggi—the first five disciples to his last disciple Subhadda, who only needed his direct helps).

But there are still people with their teachers (This is also one of the reasons the Teaching still exists). It's necessary for you to have ears to listen and have someone to teach you. Near the end of his passing away, the Buddha reminded us that mind and body dhammas were having the nature of arising and passing away. Therefore, don't forget them.

I also teach impermanence. The Buddha taught them for 45 years. Only by seeing impermanence can realize Nibbāna. Impermanence is dukkha sacca. By penetrating of dukkha sacca, realize Nibbāna. Your body is also impermanent. You will see impermanence if you look at the 31 realms of existence. Not seeing impermanence is like a blind person. Your reliable dhamma is impermanence.

You will realize Nibbāna in this life if you discern impermanence very well. If this not happen, it will be sure in next life. The Buddha gave this guarantee in the sutta in the Aṅguttara Nikāya. If you discern impermanence, greed, hatred, and delusion never arise. The Buddha never taught as anicca paccaya lobha, dosa, moha—impermanence conditions greed, hatred, and delusion.

If you are discerning impermanence, it becomes jhāna paccayo and magga paccayo. It has the five path factors = three samādhi factors + two paññā factors. If you do only jhāna, there are no wisdom factors. By doing paññā and is including jhāna. The practice I teach you include jhāna and paññā together. Jhāna and magga are together in every vipassanā contemplation. Outside the Buddha teaching (sāsana) only jhāna exists; whereas inside the sāsana, don't do this only.

Jhāna and magga have to be combined. Someone who practices jhāna should stabilize the object of contemplation. For the asubha object (loathsomeness), not let the asubha disappears. For the paṭhavī object (earth), not let the paṭhavī disappears. Therefore, It is clear that jhāna itself does not lead to Nibbāna.

The way of jhāna and magga together was mentioned in the Saṃyutta and Aṅguttara Nikāya as yuganandha way—harmonious way. Jhāna is samatha and magga is vipassanā. Samatha has to straighten it. And vipassanā has to discern it. In the five jhanic factors not include magga. Straighten the mind towards vanishing

phenomenon is jhāna. And to discern its vanishing is ñāṇa (ñāṇa). It's the way of jhāna and ñāṇa.

In front is arising and vanishing. And following behind is jhāna and magga. What is the benefit of discerning anicca? It is moving out kilesa. If not seeing impermanence, the mind is latent with kilesa. Devadatta had been swallowed by the earth because it was heavy with kilesa for him; not because he was fat. Your khandha boat is heavy with kilesa. You have to cut out the kilesa for its lightness.

In this way your khandha boat will become light and can cross over the taṇhā river to the other shore. I am urging you every day to contemplate impermanence. Because I am worrying that you'll be swallowed by earth. Do you have any pity for yourself? Except this job, there is no other work can free from it. The Buddha taught the way with samādhi and follow with paññā.

無常的重要性

(無確切日期)

你們都聽聞過佛法(空法、真理法等),也理解它們,並且已見到無常。當觸 (phassa)止息時,受(vedanā)也會止息。例如,被蚊子叮咬而感到搔癢,蚊子叮咬即是觸,搔癢即是受。

phassa paccaya vedanā——觸為緣,生受。

若無蚊子叮咬,癢也不會生起。

phassa nirodha vedanā nirodho——觸滅,則受亦滅。

有因緣則果報生,因緣滅則果報亦滅。

你們要毫無疑惑地理解這些道理,那麼邪見就會滅去。即使臨終時伴隨著痛苦受(dukkha vedanā)而死,也無須恐懼,因為修行中已斷除了邪見與疑。你已獲得**見清淨**(diṭṭhivisuddhi)與**度疑清淨**(kaṅkhāvitaraṇa visuddhi)。

這些障礙會因為觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)而滅去,雖然此時還不是道智(magga ñāṇa)。當你見到無常時,身體不會立刻消失。唯有無常止息時,色身才會消失。邪見與疑是導致眾生墮落惡道的兩種法。

因此我勸你們,在臨終之際應勇敢地死去(即以觀智觀無常)。昨天的開示中, 我遺漏了這一點,今日特別補充說明。(昨日尊者是依《聖法聽聞處經》 (Sotanugati Sutta, Aṅguttara Nikāya)來開示。)

今天我將繼續講述《相應部》中的內容。佛陀為何入般涅槃?因為他的**可教導 弟子**(vineyya)都已度化(即從最初的五比丘到最後的弟子須跋陀羅)。

但仍然有弟子尚有其師在(這亦是正法仍存的原因之一)。你們必須具備能聽 法的耳根,也要有法師教導你。佛陀在即將入滅之時提醒我們:**身心諸法皆具 生滅之性**。因此,不可忘記這一點。

我也在教導無常。佛陀四十五年來皆在教導無常。唯有見無常,才能證得涅槃。 無常即是苦諦(dukha sacca),透過貫通苦諦,即得證涅槃。你們的色身亦 是無常。若觀察三十一有,就能見到無常。未見無常就如同盲人一樣。你所真 正可以依靠的法就是無常。

若你清楚地觀察無常,今生即可證得涅槃。若今生未證,來生也必定可得。佛陀在《增支部經典》中已作此保證。若你正在觀無常,貪、瞋、癡就不會生起。佛陀從未說過:anicca paccaya lobha, dosa, moha——無常為緣生貪、瞋、癡。

若你觀察無常,它就成為**定支所緣**與**道支所緣(jhāna paccayo, magga paccayo)**。它具足五道支:三個定支(三摩地因)加上兩個慧支(智慧因)。若只修定(jhāna),則無智慧支。但若修慧,則包含定支。我所教的修法,是**定與慧同時進行**。每一次的內觀觀照(vipassanā bhāvanā),定與道法都在其中。

在佛法以外(即非佛教法),只有定存在;而在佛法中,則不能只修定。**定與 道必須並行不悖。**

修定者必須穩固其所緣對象。例如觀不淨相者,不能讓不淨相消失;觀地界者, 不能讓地界消失。因此可見,**僅僅修定,無法導向涅槃**。

定與道並行的修法,在《相應部》與《增支部》中皆有記載,稱為 yuganaddha patha—雙運道。定是奢摩他(samatha),道是毗婆舍那(vipassanā)。定可令心堅固,而慧則用以觀察諸法。五禪支中不包含道智。令心堅固於無常現象,這是定;能觀其滅,則是慧。這即是定與慧並行的修行方法。

眼前是生滅現象,隨後是定與道的心。觀無常有何利益?它能驅逐煩惱。若不見無常,則心中潛藏著煩惱。提婆達多之所以被地裂吞沒,不是因為他身材肥

胖,而是因為他煩惱沉重。你們的**蘊舟**也被煩惱所壓沉,必須割除煩惱,使之輕盈。

如此,蘊舟才得以輕安,渡過愛河,抵達彼岸。我每天都勸你們觀無常,因為我擔心你們被地所吞沒。你們是否對自己有一絲憐憫?除了這件事(修行),沒有其他任何事情能使你得度。佛陀所教導的正道,即是以定為前導,智慧為後繼。

無常的重要性

(無日期)

你們都聽過法(空法、諦法等)。你們理解它們,也看到了無常。隨著接觸(phassa)的停止,感受(vedanā)也停止。例如,被蚊子叮咬,然後發癢。蚊子叮咬是接觸,發癢是感受。

接觸緣感受(phassa paccaya vedanā)——接觸條件感受。沒有蚊子叮咬你,癢也會停止。接觸滅感受滅(phassa nirodha vedanā nirodho)——隨著接觸的停止,感受也停止。有了因緣,結果就會生起。隨著原因的停止,結果也會停止。

你們必須毫無疑問地理解這些事情。然後你們的錯誤觀點就會消失。即使你們帶著痛苦的感受(苦受)死去,你們也不需要害怕,因為你們在修行期間錯誤的觀點和懷疑都會消失。你們獲得了觀點和懷疑的淨化(diṭṭhivisuddhi 和 kankhāvitarana visuddhi)。

它隨著內觀智消失,但還沒有隨著道智消失。當你們看到無常時,身體不會消失。只有隨著無常的停止,身體才會消失。錯誤的觀點和懷疑是將眾生送到痛苦出生的兩種法。

因此,我建議你們在臨終時勇敢地死去(即透過修行認知無常)。昨天我漏掉了這一點。所以今天我在這裡補充它。(昨天尊者根據《增支部》的《須陀洹 隨信經》進行了開示。)

今天我將繼續從《相應部》進行開示。佛陀為什麼進入般涅槃(即圓寂)?因為他的直接弟子都不在了。(即佛陀的毗奈耶)(他們來自五比丘——他的第一批五位弟子,到他最後一位弟子須跋陀羅,他只需要他的直接幫助。)

但仍然有人有他們的老師(這也是教法仍然存在的原因之一)。你們必須有耳朵聽,並且有人教導你們。在他圓寂臨終之際,佛陀提醒我們身心法具有生起和消逝的本質。因此,不要忘記它們。

我也教導無常。佛陀教導了它們四十五年。只有透過看到無常才能證悟涅槃。 無常是苦諦。透過穿透苦諦,證悟涅槃。你們的身體也是無常的。如果你們觀 察三十一有,你們就會看到無常。看不到無常就像一個盲人。你們可靠的法是 無常。

如果你們很好地認知無常,你們將在此生證悟涅槃。如果這沒有發生,那麼在來生肯定會發生。佛陀在《增支部》的經文中給出了這個保證。如果你們認知無常,貪婪、憎恨和迷惑永遠不會生起。佛陀從未教導無常緣貪婪、憎恨和迷惑(anicca paccaya lobha, dosa, moha)。

如果你們認知無常,它就會變成禪定緣和道緣。它有五個道支=三個定支+兩個慧支。如果你們只做禪定,就沒有智慧支。透過做智慧,它包括禪定。我教導你們的修行包括禪定和智慧在一起。在每一次內觀觀照中,禪定和道都在一起。在佛陀教法(sāsana)之外,只有禪定存在;而在佛陀教法之內,不要只做這個。

禪定和道必須結合起來。修行禪定的人應該穩定觀照的對象。對於不淨的對象 (令人厭惡的),不要讓不淨消失。對於地遍的對象(地),不要讓地遍消失。 因此,很明顯,禪定本身並不能引導到涅槃。

禪定和道在一起的方式在《相應部》和《增支部》中被提及為雙運道 (yuganandha way)——和諧的方式。禪定是止觀,道是內觀。止觀必須使它 筆直。內觀必須認知它。在五禪支中不包括道。將心指向消逝的現象是禪定。 認知它的消逝是智(ñāṇa)。這是禪定和智的方式。

前面是生起和消逝。後面跟隨的是禪定和道。認知無常有什麼好處?它正在移 出煩惱。如果看不到無常,心就會潛伏著煩惱。提婆達多被大地吞沒,因為他 的煩惱很重;不是因為他很胖。你們的五蘊之船充滿了煩惱。你們必須切除煩 惱,才能減輕重量。

這樣,你們的五蘊之船就會變輕,才能渡過渴愛之河到達彼岸。我每天都在敦促你們觀照無常。因為我擔心你們會被大地吞沒。你們對自己有任何憐憫嗎?除了這項工作,沒有其他工作可以擺脫它。佛陀教導了以禪定開始,然後是智慧的方式。

Wholesome Kamma with Knowledge

9th December 1960

[This talk was given to a couple who came to stay with Sayadaw and practiced under his guidance. The husband first met Sayadaw and later introduced his wife to him. So here Sayadaw encouraged her in the practice. Later they gave up their business and very closed to Sayadaw until he passed away. The husband, U Kyaw Thein, knew his own death six months before.]

Desire of wanting to become a woman will become a woman; and the same as for to become a man. It is nothing to do with a man or a woman to have sharp knowledge (ñāṇa) or not. It relates to your past lives when you had done good kammas combined with ñāṇa or not.

Meeting a good teacher and having good kammas with ñāṇa, these two factors are very important. These were mentioned in the Saṃyutta Nikāya. Associate with the wise can become a sotāpanna means that kamma is a different thing (Here Sayadaw emphasized the main point and not rejected the wholesome kammas).

The kammic results are related to kamma. To get Path and Fruition Knowledge are related to ñāṇa. For example, the lay woman Visākhā (Migāramātā) became a noble person (sotāpanna) and her husband Puṇṇa (Puṇṇavaddhana) was not. He had only good kamma and without ñāṇa. Again layman Visākha and his wife Dhammadinnā both had good kamma and ñāṇa.

(Visākha was anāgāmin and Dhammadinnā was arahant). (Sayadaw told the story of Vajira bhikkhunī encountering with Mara, the Tempter). Having samādhi and following with the knowledge are important. It's nothing to do with as a man or a woman.

After that, with the practice, go onwards with the three stages of knowledge. Today I'll talk about the process of the practice: ① Intellectual understanding ② Contemplation ③ Abandoning (study, practice and realization). For the intellectual

understanding, can be measured is the body (rūpa) and can't be measured is the mind (nāma). For the four mind aggregates have to contemplate the most prominent one. (e.g., if feeling—vedanā is prominent, and then contemplate vedanā, etc.)

Mind and body are arising together. If form arises, contemplate form (rūpa), and if mind arises, contemplate mind. Contemplate the most prominent one. For example, in a pot of soup, salt, oil, sweet, etc. are in there respectively. If the salt is prominent, you feel the salt more than the others. If form arises, know it as form. If mind arises, know it as mind.

For example, if you put your foot down, paṭhavī—earth element is prominent and you feel the heaviness. If you lift it, air element is prominent and you feel lightness. If you are discerning anicca, it's developing into insight. It's tīraṇa pariññā—full understanding by contemplation. This knowledge is the most important. You have to know it thoroughly with the practice.

In this way contemplative knowledge become success. First it's discerning of arising and passing way, and then dissolution. After that, it develops into disenchantment. At that time don't stop at it. If you stop it, knowledge will go down.

I am urging you to concentrate in the contemplation with the disenchantment. After that, you will develop the knowledge of watching it like an alien (i.e., saṅkhār'upekkhā ñāṇa—knowledge of equanimity towards formations).

At that time watching it like an alien. It'll appear as watching your own practical knowledge. These are knowledge of right seeing. It's dukkha sacca—the truth of disgusting and useless. With continue contemplation and affection on the khandha with the self-view, falls away in a blip. From behind clinging and action with wrong views are cut off. Why?

Because of knowing dukkha sacca, khandha disappears and are left behind with the contemplative mind (ñāṇa). And you do not see dukkha anymore. Just only see dukkha nirodho—the cessation of dukkha. The cessation of dukkha is nirodha sacca. The Path Knowledge is called pahāna pariññā—abandoning with full understanding.

After the Path Knowledge ceases, two or three Fruition Knowledge arise. After they cease and reviewing knowledge arises. Reviewing as there is no dukkha anymore. This is reviewing dukkha, as not there. All the Path Knowledge, Fruition Knowledge, and Reviewing Knowledge are seeing no dukkha.

If you see it in line (serially) and enter the stream (become sotāpanna). So these three knowledge are seeing Nibbāna. Because of their powers, the doors to painful births are closed (i.e., Apāya bhūmi).

具備智慧的善業

1960年12月9日

【這一篇開示是針對一對夫婦而說,他們來與尊者同住並在尊者的指導下修行。 丈夫先遇見尊者,後來也介紹妻子來親近尊者。因此尊者在此鼓勵她修行。後 來他們放棄了原來的事業,一直親近尊者直到尊者涅槃為止。丈夫 U Kyaw Thein 在過世前六個月即已預知自己將死。】

想成為女人就會成為女人,想成為男人也會成為男人。是否具備銳利的智慧 (ñāṇa)與是否為男性或女性無關,而是取決於過去生是否具足善業與智慧這 兩者的結合。

遇到善知識與具備具智慧的善業,這兩個因緣極為重要。在《相應部》裡有提及:親近智者即能成為須陀洹,這表示業與證道是不同的層面(這裡尊者強調修行的重點,而非否定善業的重要性)。

業的果報屬於業的範疇,而證得道果則與智慧有關。例如,在家女毘舍佉 (Migāramātā)成為聖者(須陀洹),但她的丈夫富那(Puṇṇavaddhana)卻沒 有。他只有善業,但無智慧;又如在家男毘舍佉與其妻法持尼 (Dhammadinnā)兩人皆具備善業與智慧。(毘舍佉是阿那含,法持尼是阿羅

(Dhammadinna) 兩人皆具備善業與智慧。(毘舍伝是阿那含,法持厄是阿羅漢。)

(尊者也提到比丘尼筏若羅與魔王的對話。)具備定與隨後生起的智慧十分重要,這與性別無關。

接著談到修行,必須經歷三階段的智:①聞所成慧(知解)、②修所成慧(觀行)、③修證智(斷惑)。第一階段的聞所成慧,可以從可量度的色法與不可

量度的名法入手。在四蘊(受、想、行、識)當中,可從最明顯的部分入手觀察(例如以受為明顯時,就觀受等)。

名與色是同時生起的;若色生起,就觀色;若名生起,就觀名。觀察最明顯的 現象。例如一鍋湯中有鹽、油與甜味等,若鹽味突出,就會先感覺到鹽味。若 色生起,了知它是色;若心生起,了知它是心。

舉例來說,若腳踩地,有地界(paṭhavī)強,會感到沈重;若提腳,有風界強,會感到輕盈。若你正在如實觀照無常,就代表正在開展觀智。這是「修所成慧」(tīraṇa pariññā),也就是透過觀行而來的完全了解。這種智慧最為關鍵,必須透過修行而深刻體認。

這樣修行所生的觀智才能成就。最初是觀見生滅,接著是觀見壞滅,然後發展出厭離。此時不可停下來,若停下來,智慧會退失。

我鼓勵你們要持續專注於觀行,即便已生起厭離。接下來將進展到「猶如外人之觀」——即行捨智(saṅkhār'upekkhā ñāṇa)。

那時你會如外人般地觀照自己當下的觀智。這就是「正見的智」——如實知見。 這是對「苦諦」的觀知,即觀見這些法是厭惡與無益的。持續觀照之後,對五 蘊的我執將在剎那間斷除。隨之而來的是對蘊的執取與業的錯誤見解也會一併 斷除。為什麼?

因為你已正知苦諦,五蘊(khandha)滅盡,只剩觀智(ñāṇa)。此時你不再見到苦,只見到苦滅,也就是滅諦。這個見苦滅的智,就是「斷慧」(pahāna pariññā)——以完全了解而斷除。

道智之後,將生起二至三次的果智(phala ñāṇa)。這些果智之後,還會生起審查智(paccavekkhaṇa ñāṇa),了知「苦已不存在」。這就是審察苦已滅。

道智、果智與審查智,三者皆是見到「無苦」的智。

若能一一地串連這些智,便能入流(成為須陀洹果位)。因此,這三種智慧皆是見到涅槃的智。由於這些智慧的力量,使得四惡趣之門得以關閉(即不再墮入惡趣——Apāya bhūmi)。

帶有智慧的善業

1960年12月9日

[這次開示是給一對夫婦的,他們來與尊者同住,並在他的指導下修行。丈夫先認識尊者,後來將他的妻子介紹給他。因此,尊者在這裡鼓勵她修行。後來他們放棄了生意,非常親近尊者,直到他圓寂。丈夫吳覺登(U Kyaw Thein)在他去世前六個月就知道自己的死期。]

想要成為女人的欲望會成為女人;想要成為男人也是一樣。擁有敏銳的智慧 (ñāṇa)與否,與男人或女人無關。這與您過去世是否做了帶有智慧的善業有 關。

遇到一位好老師,並擁有帶有智慧的善業,這兩個因素非常重要。這些在《相應部》中提到。與智者交往可以成為入流者,這意味著業力是不同的事情(尊者在這裡強調了重點,並沒有否定善業)。

業力結果與業力有關。獲得道智和果智與智慧有關。例如,在家婦女毘舍佉 (Migāramātā)成為一位聖者(入流者),而她的丈夫富那(Puṇṇavaddhana)則不是。他只有善業,沒有智慧。再次,在家居士毘舍佉和他的妻子達摩迪那 (Dhammadinnā)都有善業和智慧。

(毘舍佉是阿那含,達摩迪那是阿羅漢)。(尊者講述了金剛比丘尼遇到魔羅的故事)。擁有禪定並跟隨智慧非常重要。這與身為男人或女人無關。

之後,透過修行,繼續進行三個智慧階段。今天我將談論修行的過程:①知性理解②觀照③捨棄(學習、修行和證悟)。對於知性理解,可以測量的是身體(色),無法測量的是心(名)。對於四個心蘊,必須觀照最突出的那一個。(例如,如果感受(vedanā)突出,則觀照感受等等。)

身心同時生起。如果色生起,觀照色(rūpa),如果心生起,觀照心。觀照最突出的那一個。例如,在一鍋湯中,鹽、油、甜味等分別存在。如果鹽突出,您會比其他味道更能感受到鹽。如果色生起,知道它是色。如果心生起,知道它是心。

例如,如果您放下腳,地元素(paṭhavī)突出,您會感到沉重。如果您抬起它,風元素突出,您會感到輕盈。如果您認知無常,它就會發展成內觀。這是諦了知(tīraṇa pariññā)——透過觀照的充分理解。這種智慧最重要。您必須透過修行徹底了解它。

這樣,觀照智慧就會成功。首先是認知生起和消逝,然後是壞滅。之後,它發展成厭離。那時不要停止。如果您停止,智慧就會下降。

我敦促您專注於帶有厭離的觀照。之後,您將發展出像局外人一樣觀察它的智慧(即行捨智(sankhār'upekkhā ñāṇa)——對行作保持平靜的智慧)。

那時像局外人一樣觀察它。它會像觀察您自己的實踐知識一樣出現。這些是正見的智慧。它是苦諦——令人厭惡和無用的真理。透過持續的觀照,對帶有我見的五蘊的情感,會在瞬間消失。從後面,帶有錯誤觀點的執著和行為被切斷。 為什麼?

因為了解苦諦,五蘊消失,只剩下觀照的心(ñāṇa)。您不再看到苦。只看到苦滅(dukkha nirodho)。苦滅是滅諦。道智被稱為斷了知(pahāna pariññā)——帶有充分理解的捨棄。

道智停止後,會生起兩三個果智。它們停止後,會生起回顧智。回顧為不再有苦。這是回顧苦,因為它不存在。所有的道智、果智和回顧智都看不到苦。

如果您按順序看到它(連續地),就會進入聖流(成為入流者)。因此,這三種智慧都在看到涅槃。由於它們的力量,通往痛苦出生的門被關閉(即惡趣)。

Wrong View, Dukkha and Nibbāna

10th October 1960

Whatever arising in the khandha, for example, form (rūpa) arising is dukkha arising. Form passing away is dukkha ceasing. Feeling (vedanā) arising is dukkha arising. Feeling passing away is dukkha ceasing. If you are doing this, a person or a being disappears. In this way, free from wrong view.

(Sayadaw continued to talk about the eight causes for wrong views to arise.)

① Not knowing khandha arising has wrong views, or not knowing about the khandhas. ② Avijjā—ignorance: with wrong knowing, wrong knowledge causes wrong views to arise. ③ Because of contact (phassa) ④ With wrong perception ⑤ With wrong thinking ⑥ With unwise attention ⑦ With wrong companions ⑧ Listening to wrong teachings.

These are the eight causes for wrong views to arise. We must kill all these with the knowledge of seeing impermanence. Before meeting a good teacher, it's in the mind. After meeting a good teacher, it falls away from the mind (with the intellectual knowledge + practical knowledge).

Because of the causes, we experience the result, and with this we are free from wrong view. Regarding with the kammic result; if you do it and you'll get it—is wrong view. The kammic energy or power is following but not the khandhas because it's arising here and vanishing here. With the eight causes of wrong views, beings go to painful births.

As long as khandhas exist, it's arising and vanishing. And then you are free from the eight causes of wrong views. Not a person or a being is following behind. With the causes as condition, result appears. For example, it's like a stamp and the mark it produces it.

(It's a very good simile to understand cause and effect without a permanent entity. Stamp and its mark are not the same nor different. This is the Buddha's Middle Way).

If you still not get Nibbāna yet, the result will follow you. The human khandha perishes here and the heavenly khandha arises there. The human khandha is ceasing here and the new heavenly khandha arises there. This human khandha is not following there. If it's really following there, they must have the same khandha. How can a human khandha become a devata khandha? Don't accept to what other people say. If you take it, becomes wrong view.

You have to accept what the khandha is telling you or showing you. This khandha is only telling you as dukkha arising and dukkha ceasing—which is dukkhakhandhassa samudayo hoti; dukkhakhandhassa nirodho hoti. Therefore, any realm of wherever you have been, there only existence of dukkha arising and dukkha ceasing.

Does anything exist in Nibbāna? It exists as without any dukkha. Dhamma with dukkha exists is mind and body—the five khandhas. Therefore, Nibbāna exists, not with dukkha nature but as sukha nature. (So the Buddha said that Nibbāna is the Supreme Happiness).

Someone thinking and taking dukkha as me and mine will never realize Nibbāna. Someone not thinking and taking dukkha as me and mine will realize Nibbāna. What is Nibbāna? Our khandhas are for many lives time is dukkha sacca. A person thoroughly penetrates dukkha sacca and not wanting it and will not live with this khandha. Living with dukkha is living with mind and body. Not living with dukkha is Nibbāna.

Someone will appreciate Nibbāna only he falls off wrong view. Otherwise, he will appreciate it only by hearing from others. Therefore, you have to observe dukkha arising and ceasing in your own khandha. However, you observe and it is only dukkha sacca.

It can't exist as stability because it's arising moment to moment and dying moment to moment. Moment to moment, only deaths are arising. Only without it and have stability. Their total cessation is dukkha nirodho nibbānam—the cessation of dukkha is Nibbāna. So Nibbāna appears.

Therefore, only someone is seeing dukkha and Nibbāna can arise. If not, never arises (i.e., not practice and only with vows and prayers). People are clinging to dukkha as, "It's mine. It's mine." If dukkha the heavy load falls off, is the happiness of Nibbāna.

Not knowing dukkha is the cause of wrong view. Knowing dukkha is right view. Sammādiṭṭhi knows it. Therefore, it's important to know the real dukkha. Since the day you know about it, you don't want it.

邪見、苦與涅槃

1960年10月10日

不論五蘊中哪一法的生起,例如色法(rūpa)的生起,即是苦的生起;色法的滅去,即是苦的滅去。受(vedanā)的生起是苦的生起,受的滅去是苦的滅去。若你這樣觀察,那麼「人」與「眾生」的概念將會消失。如此便遠離了邪見。

(尊者接著講解導致邪見生起的八種因。)

① 不知五蘊之生起,或對五蘊一無所知;② 無明(avijjā) ——以錯誤認知而生起錯誤的知見,即引發邪見;③ 由於觸(phassa);④ 由於錯誤的想;⑤ 由於錯誤的思惟;⑥ 由於不正思惟;⑦ 由於親近惡友;⑧ 由於聽聞邪法。

這八種原因會導致邪見的生起。我們必須以觀察無常的智慧來摧毀它們。未遇 到善知識之前,邪見存在於心中;一旦遇到善知識,邪見便會從心中消除(這 是由聞慧與修慧所致)。

當具備這些因時,便會產生相應的果;但若能具足正知與觀照,便能從邪見中解脫出來。關於業的果報,有人認為:「我造作,所以我得果。」——這種想法即是邪見。實際上是業的能量或力量持續運作,而不是五蘊在持續相續,因為它們是剎那生剎那滅的。正是由於這八種原因,眾生才墮入惡趣。

只要五蘊存在,就會不斷地生起與滅去;若能明白此理,便能從八種邪見中解 脫出來。此中並無一個「人」或「眾生」在隨著相續。僅是因緣條件具足而產 生果報。例如,就像一枚印章所留下的印記。

(這是一個極佳的譬喻,幫助我們理解因果法則中無「實體」的中道觀——印章與印記既非相同也非異體。)

若你尚未證得涅槃,則業報仍將持續運作。人道的五蘊在此滅去,天道的五蘊 便在彼處生起。人道的五蘊滅於此處,新的天道五蘊生起於彼處。並非此處的 五蘊延續到彼處。如果它真的延續,那麼兩處的五蘊應當相同。但人道的五蘊 怎會變成天道的五蘊?所以,不要輕信他人之言。若你接受了,就會落入邪見。

你必須根據五蘊自身所表現出來的實相去理解。五蘊只是在告訴你:「苦在生起,苦在滅去」——也就是「苦蘊的生起、苦蘊的滅去」(dukkhakhandhassa samudayo hoti, dukkhakhandhassa nirodho hoti)。因此,不論你投生於哪一道,所存在的僅是苦的生起與苦的滅去。

那麼,涅槃中有什麼存在呢?它存在為一種「無苦」的狀態。有苦的法是名與色,也就是五蘊。因此,涅槃並不是有苦的本性,而是有樂的本性。(所以佛陀說:涅槃是最上的安樂。)

若有人將苦執為「我」與「我所」,他將永遠無法證得涅槃。若有人不將苦執為「我」與「我所」,他將能證得涅槃。那麼,涅槃是什麼?我們累生累劫以來的五蘊,即是苦諦。一位透徹了知苦諦的人,不再渴望此五蘊,亦不願與之共住。與苦共住即是與名與色共住;不與苦共住即是涅槃。

一個人唯有斷除邪見,才會真正欣賞涅槃的價值。否則,他對涅槃的欣賞僅止 於聽聞他人所說。因此,你必須觀察自身五蘊中苦的生滅。無論你如何觀察, 都只是在觀察苦諦。

它不可能處於穩定狀態,因為它是剎那生剎那滅的。每一剎那,都是「死」的生起。唯有當這一切都止息時,才有穩定的存在。它們的完全止息即是「苦滅即涅槃」(dukkha nirodho nibbānam)——苦的止息即是涅槃。如此,涅槃即現前。

因此,唯有見苦者才能現證涅槃;若不能見苦,則永遠無法證得(意指不修行, 只靠誓願與祈禱)。眾生總是執著苦為「我所」,說:「這是我的!這是我 的!」若能讓苦這沉重的負擔卸下,那便是涅槃的安樂。 不了知苦,是邪見的根源;了知苦,即是正見。正見(sammādiṭṭhi)即是能如實知見苦的智慧。因此,能如實知見真實的苦,是極為重要的。從你真正了解苦的那一天起,你便不再貪戀它。

錯誤的觀點、苦和涅槃

1960年10月10日

五蘊中生起的任何事物,例如,色(rūpa)生起是苦生起。色消逝是苦止息。 感受(vedanā)生起是苦生起。感受消逝是苦止息。如果您這樣做,一個人或 一個眾生就會消失。這樣,您就擺脫了錯誤的觀點。

(尊者繼續談論生起錯誤觀點的八個原因。)

①不知道五蘊生起有錯誤的觀點,或者不了解五蘊。②無明(avijjā):錯誤的知識導致錯誤的觀點生起。③由於接觸(phassa)④由於錯誤的感知⑤由於錯誤的思考⑥由於不智的注意⑦由於錯誤的同伴⑧聽錯誤的教導。

這些是生起錯誤觀點的八個原因。我們必須用看到無常的知識來消滅所有這些。 在遇到一位好老師之前,它在心中。在遇到一位好老師之後,它從心中消失 (透過知性知識+實踐知識)。

由於這些原因,我們體驗到結果,因此我們擺脫了錯誤的觀點。關於業力結果;如果您做了,您就會得到它——這是錯誤的觀點。業力能量或力量正在跟隨,但不是五蘊,因為它在這裡生起,在這裡消逝。有了錯誤觀點的八個原因,眾生就會去痛苦的出生。

只要五蘊存在,它就會生起和消逝。然後您就擺脫了錯誤觀點的八個原因。沒 有一個人或一個眾生在後面跟隨。以這些原因作為條件,結果就會出現。例如, 它就像一個印章和它產生的印記。

(這是一個非常好的比喻,可以理解沒有永久實體的因果關係。印章和它的印 記既不相同也不不同。這是佛陀的中道。)

如果您還沒有證悟涅槃,結果就會跟隨您。人的五蘊在這裡消逝,天人的五蘊在那裡生起。人的五蘊在這裡停止,新的天人的五蘊在那裡生起。這個人的五蘊不會跟隨到那裡。如果它真的跟隨到那裡,它們必須有相同的五蘊。人的五

蘊怎麼能變成天人的五蘊?不要接受別人說的話。如果您接受它,就會變成錯 誤的觀點。

您必須接受五蘊告訴您或向您展示的內容。這個五蘊只告訴您苦生起和苦止息 ——苦蘊之生起;苦蘊之止息。因此,無論您去過哪個境界,那裡只有苦生起 和苦止息的存在。

涅槃中是否存在任何東西?它以沒有任何苦的方式存在。帶有苦的法存在是身心——五蘊。因此,涅槃存在,不是帶有苦的本質,而是帶有樂的本質。(因此,佛陀說涅槃是至上的幸福。)

認為並將苦視為我和我所的人永遠不會證悟涅槃。不認為並將苦視為我和我所的人會證悟涅槃。什麼是涅槃?我們多生以來的五蘊是苦諦。一個人徹底穿透苦諦,不想要它,就不會與這個五蘊一起生活。與苦一起生活就是與身心一起生活。不與苦一起生活就是涅槃。

只有擺脫錯誤觀點的人才會欣賞涅槃。否則,他只會透過聽別人說來欣賞它。 因此,您必須觀察自己五蘊中的苦生起和苦止息。但是,您觀察到的都只是苦 諦。

它不能以穩定的方式存在,因為它是剎那剎那生起,剎那剎那死亡。剎那剎那,只有死亡在生起。只有沒有它,才有穩定性。它們的完全止息是苦滅涅槃——苦的止息是涅槃。因此,涅槃出現。

因此,只有看到苦的人,涅槃才會生起。否則,永遠不會生起(即不修行,只 靠誓言和祈禱)。人們執著於苦,認為「這是我的。這是我的。」如果苦這個 沉重的負擔消失,就是涅槃的幸福。

不知道苦是錯誤觀點的原因。知道苦是正確的觀點。正見(Sammādiṭṭhi)知道它。因此,了解真正的苦很重要。自從您了解它以來,您就不想要它。

Importance of the Truth of Dukkha

11th December 1960

We start from truth of dukkha—dukkha sacca, mind and body. After that dukkha develop. Become a human, a deity, etc. are only in speech. And only dukkha is increasing, taking this in mind as a truth. It only exists as dukkha arises and dukkha passes away. (Sayadaw mentioned about human's dukkha starting from a mother's womb. Later comes out and growth).

It really exists that only dukkha arising and dukkha passing away. If not, you'll confuse with it as man and woman etc., and then follow with sorrow and lamentation because you lost your dukkha sacca.

(It is interesting to reflect. Actually human embryo starts from a very tiny spot of mind and matter process without human form. After become mature and has a human form. After born and get lost in concept).

When we are alive and substitute with mind and body process. When we die mind and body perishes. It was starting with the truth of dukkha. After born and lost dukkha sacca. Therefore, if something happening to us and we have to cry for it. We should make the decision that except dukkha sacca there is nothing about it.

In the beginning starts with dukkha, in the middle lives with dukkha, and in the ends also end with dukkha. Except these, no other things exist. You all have lost three of them. Not aware of them as arising and passing dukkha sacca. You are lost the original thing.

By knowing them as in the beginning, in the middle, and in the end is only dukkha. It will only tell its dukkha nature when someone is sick and dying. It's telling you its dukkha nature. Originally it's loathsome nature (loathsome, foulness). So at dying, only tell its loathsomeness. If you say why it happens to me, then you lost the principle.

Crying for it is not important, but will arrive to painful births. Because crying is dosa and smiling is lobha. If you lost the principle of dukkha sacca will arrive to the painful births. Originally it's truth of dukkha.

Therefore, start with dukkha sacca, and then mature with dukkha, in the end lost with dukkha. If you not lost the principle, sorrow and lamentation will not arise. If you lost the principle, that means you want to cry. If we don't lose the principle or arising and vanishing dukkha, we will arrive Nibbāna. Not knowing the principle is tears and hell. Having lost the principle is also tears and hell.

You must remember these two points. With losing the principle, the four woeful planes are not safety for us. Every time you have to know it as truth of dukkha with your own knowledge. When this knowing comes to an end, Path Knowledge will arise.

I am telling you the reality. You have to practice accordingly with the reality and the knowing together. If you know in this way, the dhamma leading towards crying is no more in your mind. From becoming sotāpanna to Buddha, each one's reality and knowing have to be the same (i.e., when arising, knowing the arising; when vanishing, knowing its vanishing).

From the beginning to the end, don't get lost the dukkha principle. Reality and the knowing have to be the same or fit in together (i.e., anicca and ñāṇa). When the Path Knowledge arises, sorrow and lamentation will extinguish. That's Nibbāna. This also mentioned in the Satipaṭṭhāna Sutta.

苦諦的重要性

1960年12月11日

我們的起點是苦諦(dukkha sacca)——即身心(名色)的實相。接著,苦便展開發展。變成人、天等等,這些都只是語言上的表達,實際上只有苦在增長。我們應以此作為內心的真實信念:世間唯有苦的生起與苦的滅去。(尊者提到人類的苦是從母胎開始,隨後出生、成長。)

事實上,實實在在存在的,只有苦的生起與苦的滅去。如果不這麼理解,就會將其誤解為「男人」「女人」等等,從而生起悲傷與哀慟,因為已失去對苦諦的理解。

(這樣反思是非常有意義的。其實人類的胚胎最初只是極微小的名色過程,還 沒有人的形相;長成後才有人的形狀,出生之後便迷失於概念之中。)

當我們活著時,只是由身心的過程所代替而已;當我們死時,身心便滅去。生命本來就是從苦諦開始的。出生之後,苦諦便被遺忘了。因此,當我們遭遇什麼事情而哭泣時,應下定決心:除了苦諦,並無其他。

從開始就是苦,在中間是以苦而活,最後也是以苦終結。除此之外,世間並無其他。你們全都遺忘了這三點。不曾了知它們即是苦諦的生與滅,已經遺失了最原初的東西。

若能如實知見:起點是苦,中間是苦,終點也是苦——那麼一切都會清楚。當人生病與臨終時,它正在向你揭示其本質——苦。它原本的性質就是厭惡(不淨、可厭)。因此,臨終時只會顯示出其可厭的真相。如果你說:「為什麼這事發生在我身上?」那你就已經迷失了法則。

哭泣本身並不重要,但會導致墮入惡趣。因為哭泣是瞋(dosa),而歡笑是貪(lobha)。若你失去苦諦的原則,就會墮入惡趣。事實上,這身體本來就是苦諦。

所以,開始於苦諦,成熟於苦,最終滅於苦。若不失去這個原則,就不會生起 悲傷與哀慟。若失去了原則,就會想哭。若我們不失去對苦生滅的觀察與理解, 就能抵達涅槃。不知此原則者,將淚流入地獄;失去此原則者,亦淚流入地獄。

你們必須記住這兩點:若失去原則,四惡趣對我們來說便毫無保障。每一刻,你都必須以自身的智慧,了知「這是苦諦」。當這樣的了知完成,便會生起道智。

我所說的是實相,你必須依據實相而修行,並且與那份了知同時俱行。若你能如此了知,心中便不再存在導向哭泣的法。從初果聖者(須陀洹)至佛陀,每一位的實相與了知都必須一致(即當法生起時了知其生起,當法滅去時了知其滅去)。

從開始到結束,不可迷失苦的原則。實相與了知必須一致、吻合(即無常與觀智)。當道智生起時,悲傷與哀慟便會止息。那就是涅槃。這在《念住經》中也有提及。

苦諦的重要性

1960年12月11日

我們從苦諦——身心開始。之後苦發展。成為人類、天人等等,都只是在言語上。只有苦在增加,將此銘記於心作為真理。它只以苦生起和苦消逝的方式存在。(尊者提到人類的苦從母親的子宮開始。後來出來並成長。)

只有苦生起和苦消逝才是真實存在的。否則,您會將其與男人和女人等混淆, 然後因為失去了您的苦諦而隨之而來的是悲傷和哀號。

(反思一下很有趣。實際上,人類胚胎始於一個非常微小的身心過程點,沒有 人類形態。成熟後才有人類形態。出生後迷失在概念中。)

當我們活著時,用身心過程來替代。當我們死亡時,身心消逝。它始於苦諦。 出生後失去了苦諦。因此,如果我們發生了什麼事,我們不得不為它哭泣。我 們應該做出決定,除了苦諦之外,沒有其他關於它的事情。

開始時始於苦,中間活在苦中,結束時也以苦結束。除了這些,沒有其他事物存在。你們都失去了它們中的三個。沒有意識到它們是生起和消逝的苦諦。你們失去了原來的東西。

透過知道它們在開始、中間和結束時都只是苦。當有人生病和臨終時,它只會告訴您它的苦的本質。它在告訴您它的苦的本質。原本它是令人厭惡的本質 (令人厭惡、污穢)。因此,在臨終時,只會告訴您它的令人厭惡。如果您說 為什麼它發生在我身上,那麼您就失去了原則。

為它哭泣並不重要,但會到達痛苦的出生。因為哭泣是瞋,微笑是貪。如果您 失去了苦諦的原則,就會到達痛苦的出生。原本它是苦諦。

因此,從苦諦開始,然後以苦成熟,最後以苦結束。如果您沒有失去原則,悲傷和哀號就不會生起。如果您失去了原則,這意味著您想哭。如果我們不失去

原則或生起和消逝的苦,我們就會到達涅槃。不知道原則是眼淚和地獄。失去原則也是眼淚和地獄。

您必須記住這兩點。失去原則,四惡趣對我們來說並不安全。每次您都必須用 自己的知識知道它是苦諦。當這種知道結束時,道智就會生起。

我告訴您現實。您必須按照現實和知道一起修行。如果您以這種方式知道,引 導您哭泣的法就不再在您的心中。從成為入流者到佛陀,每個人的現實和知道 都必須相同(即生起時,知道生起;消逝時,知道它的消逝)。

從開始到結束,不要迷失苦的原則。現實和知道必須相同或相符(即無常和智)。當道智生起時,悲傷和哀號就會熄滅。那就是涅槃。這也在《念處經》中提到。

From Ignorance to Knowledge

12th December 1960

[This talk is important. Sayadaw explained how anicca ñāṇa or vipassanā ñāṇas destroyed ignorance—avijjā which is the source of khandha processes. The twelve links in the D. A. process which represent of past, present and future is the right one as explained in the sutta.

Sayadaw explained this point in this talk also supported it. Some Asian and Western scholars cannot see it clearly and taking the three periods as wrong interpretation.]

paṭicca-samuppāda is the cause and Paṭicca-samuppanna is the result. Someone not practices taking the khandha as a man or a woman, me or him, etc. Someone practices not thinking in this way. A person without knowing it, ignorance is latent in the mind. Then ignorance arises. This is paṭicca-samuppāda arising.

After that, with speech and body actions make volitional formation—sankhāra. At the time of not contemplating with impermanence is living with ignorance and making sankhāra. With sankhāra and consciousness—viñnāṇaṁ arises. For example, with eyes seeing a person and hate this person with anger (dosa) and worry with sorrow arise (for unwholesome dhamma).

Unwholesome dhamma arises and continues to unwholesomeness. In accordance with the sīla standard this is not unwholesome. But in the mind this becomes unwholesome. Without any practice, the whole day all these things arise in turn. All arising is with ignorance—avijjā and returning to avijjā → saṅkhāra.

Therefore, the circles turning around in whole day are uncountable. So we are running in circle. Starting from ignorance and come back to ignorance. We are making dukkha sacca that the results of khandha dukkha sacca will arise in circle. Born and die born and die and etc. Khandha processes never stop. (It's quite frightening).

Someone contemplates impermanence and next khandha not arises. If you live idly, khandhas are continuously arising. It becomes knowledge—(vijj \bar{a}) with the contemplation of impermanence. The dhammas will follow it are cut off, and ignorance before it also cut off.

[Here Sayadaw emphasized two points. ① Stop section 1 (i.e., avijjā \rightarrow saṅkhāra) ② Stop section three and four (i.e., taṇhā \rightarrow upādāna \rightarrow kamma \rightarrow jāti)]

3 The cessation of the beginning, i.e., point 1 and the cutting off behind, i.e., point 2.

Therefore, vipassanā is cutting off one's bad causes by oneself. This dhamma is showing the cutting off avijjā. With contemplation, become knowledge—(vijjā), ignorance conditions volitional formation not arises—avijjā paccaya saṅkhāra. Avijjā becomes knowledge which cuts off one's own root cause.

For example, Tin Hla has a cough because of the cold. Giving heat to the body, the cold disappears, no cough anymore (Daw Tin Hla was U Kyaw Thein's wife. Both were Sayadaw's close disciples). Present khandhas continue to arise are the causes of avijjā, saṅkhāra, taṇhā, upādāna, kamma of the past life.

With the vipassanā contemplation to these continuous arising khandha and not let the causes, taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma, for the future khandhas to arise. I am asking you to cut off the causes (the past and the present causes). The past causes are section of avijjā, saṅkhāra. The present causes for future are section of taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma.

The knowledge of contemplation of impermanence kills the causes. You are ending your own kamma. This is for someone who knows it, called a knowledgeable person. For someone not know is running in circle—an ignorant person. Making avijjā to become vijjā—ignorance becomes knowledge.

Therefore, vipassanā practice is cutting the beginning of D. A. process. (i.e., avijjā \rightarrow saṅkhāra \rightarrow viññāṇa) People don't know the causes of dukkha and how to

cut off. Not knowing impermanence is ignorance and dukkha arises because of it. Digging out the root of ignorance and no poison tree exists and not bears poison fruit.

Contemplation of vipassanā is for the knowledge of four noble truths. Impermanence is dukkha sacca and knowing of it is magga sacca. Not knowing the truth is ignorance—avijjā and knowing it is knowledge—vijjā. By killing the beginning of the cause (avijjā) and khandha can't arise.

People not practice and connecting dukkha one by one in infinity. Vipassanā means the job of digging out the root of ignorance. (By listening many talks on D. A. process of Mogok Sayadaw, and understand some profound and subtle meanings hidden in it.)

從無明到智慧

1960年12月12日開示

【這篇開示極為重要。尊者闡述了如何透過觀無常智(anicca ñāṇa 或稱觀智 vipassanā ñāṇa)來斷除無明(avijjā),這正是蘊身流轉的根源。依據經典中所說,十二因緣涵蓋過去、現在與未來三世的流轉次第,尊者在本講中明確支持這一解釋。有些亞洲與西方學者無法清楚掌握此義,將三世因果的說法誤解為錯誤的詮釋。】

「緣起法」(paṭicca-samuppāda)是因,「緣生法」(paṭicca-samuppanna)是果。未修行的人會將五蘊錯認為是人、是女人、是我、是他等;而修行人則不會如此錯誤認知。不了解此法者,無明潛藏於心中;一旦無明生起,即是緣起的開始。

接著,透過語言與身體的行為造作了「行」(sankhāra)。在未觀照無常的情況下生活,便是與無明共住、造作行法。由行而生「識」(viññāṇa)。例如,眼見一人,生起瞋恨心(dosa),進而憂愁悲苦,這就是不善法的生起。

不善法生起後,接續更多不善法。雖從戒的層面來看,此時似無過失,但在心相續中,已是造作惡業。若無修行,如此的心路歷程整日持續,周而復始,全由無明引領,從「無明」到「行」,不斷循環。

因此,我們整日都在輪轉,從無明開始,又回到無明。這正是造作「苦諦」 (dukkha sacca),也即形成未來「苦蘊」(khandha)的因。生而復死,死而 復生,五蘊無止無休地生滅,這是極為恐怖的事。

修觀無常者,能阻斷下一個蘊身的生起;懈怠度日者,則讓蘊身無窮盡地延續。若能觀照無常,便能轉無明為智(vijjā),並斷除後續的緣生法,也能斷除先行的無明。

【此處尊者強調兩大重點:

- ① 斷除前段(無明→行)
- ② 斷除後段(愛→取→業→生)】
- ③ 起始處的止息(即①),以及後端的截斷(即②)。

是故,觀智即是自行斷除惡因的修道法。此法門正是為了斷除無明。透過觀照,轉化為智(vijjā),便能使「無明緣行」的鏈結止息。無明被轉化為智慧,自身的苦因便被根除。

譬如說,Tin Hla 女士因著涼而咳嗽。給予溫熱,寒氣消除,咳嗽也就止息。 (Tin Hla 女士是 Kyaw Thein 居士的妻子,兩人皆為尊者的親近弟子。)目前 的蘊身乃是過去的無明、行、愛、取、業所造成。若能以觀智觀照這不斷生起 的蘊身,則可止息未來蘊身的生起因,也就是愛、取與業。

我之所以開示這些,是為了讓你們自行斷除這些因。過去的因為「無明、行」這一段;現在會導致未來生起的因,則為「愛、取、業」這一段。

觀照無常的智慧正是斷因之道。這是在了知之人所為,故稱為智者;而不知道者便是隨順輪迴的愚者。是轉無明為智——讓無明成為智慧。

因此,觀行即是斷除十二因緣之初段(無明→行→識)。人們之所以無法離苦,是因為他們不知道「苦的原因」以及如何止息此因。不知無常即是無明,因無明而招感苦的生起。若能挖掘無明的根,則毒樹不生,毒果不現。

修觀的目的,是為了證知四聖諦。無常是苦諦,知苦即是道諦。不知苦諦為無明,知苦諦即為智慧。若能從源頭斷除無明,則蘊身不再生起。

未修行者無盡地串連著苦。觀行就是「挖掘無明根本」的工作。(聆聽尊者大量關於緣起的開示後,方能體會其隱微而深奧之義。)

從無明到智慧

1960年12月12日

[這次開示很重要。尊者解釋了無常智或內觀智如何摧毀無明,無明是五蘊過程的根源。十二因緣代表過去、現在和未來,正如經文中所解釋的那樣是正確的。

尊者在這次開示中也支持了這一點。一些亞洲和西方學者無法清楚地看到它, 並將這三個時期視為錯誤的解釋。1

緣起(paṭicca-samuppāda)是原因,緣生(Paṭicca-samuppanna)是結果。不修行的人將五蘊視為男人或女人、我或他等等。修行的人不這樣思考。一個人不知道它,無明潛伏在心中。然後無明生起。這是緣起的生起。

之後,透過言語和身體行為造作行(sankhāra)。在不觀照無常的時候,是活在無明中並造作行。有了行,識(viñnāṇam)生起。例如,眼睛看到一個人,因憤怒(dosa)而討厭這個人,並因悲傷而擔憂(對於不善法)。

不善法生起並持續不善。按照戒律的標準,這不是不善。但在心中,這就變成了不善。沒有任何修行,整天這些事情依次生起。所有生起都帶有無明,並回到無明→行。

因此,整天轉動的圈子是數不清的。所以我們在繞圈。從無明開始,回到無明。 我們正在造作苦諦,五蘊苦諦的結果將會在圈子中生起。生生死死等等。五蘊 過程永不停止。(這相當可怕。)

觀照無常的人,下一個五蘊不會生起。如果你們懶散地生活,五蘊就會不斷生起。透過觀照無常,它會變成智慧(vijjā)。隨之而來的法被切斷,之前的無明也被切斷。

[尊者在這裡強調了兩點。①停止第一部分(即無明→行)②停止第三和第四部分(即渴愛→執取→業→生)]

③開始的止息,即第一點,以及後面的切斷,即第二點。

因此,內觀是自己切斷自己的惡因。這個法顯示了切斷無明。透過觀照,變成智慧(vijjā),無明緣行不生起——無明緣行。無明變成智慧,切斷自己的根本原因。

例如,丁拉(Tin Hla)因為感冒而咳嗽。給身體加熱,感冒消失,不再咳嗽 (丁拉女士是吳覺登的妻子。他們都是尊者的親近弟子)。現在持續生起的五 蘊是過去世的無明、行、渴愛、執取和業的原因。

透過對這些持續生起的五蘊進行內觀觀照,不讓未來五蘊生起的原因,渴愛、 執取和業生起。我要求你們切斷原因(過去和現在的原因)。過去的原因是無 明、行的部分。現在未來的原因是渴愛、執取和業的部分。

觀照無常的智慧消滅了原因。你們正在結束自己的業。這對於知道它的人來說, 被稱為有知識的人。對於不知道的人來說,是在繞圈——一個無知的人。使無 明變成智慧。

因此,內觀修行正在切斷緣起過程的開始。(即無明→行→識)人們不知道苦的原因以及如何切斷。不知道無常是無明,苦因此而生起。挖出無明的根,毒樹就不存在,也不會結出毒果。

內觀觀照是為了了解四聖諦。無常是苦諦,了解它是道諦。不知道真理是無明,知道它是智慧。透過消滅原因的開始(無明),五蘊就無法生起。

不修行的人無限地一個接一個地連接苦。內觀意味著挖出無明根源的工作。 (透過聆聽莫哥尊者關於緣起過程的許多開示,並理解其中隱藏的一些深刻而微妙的含義。)